

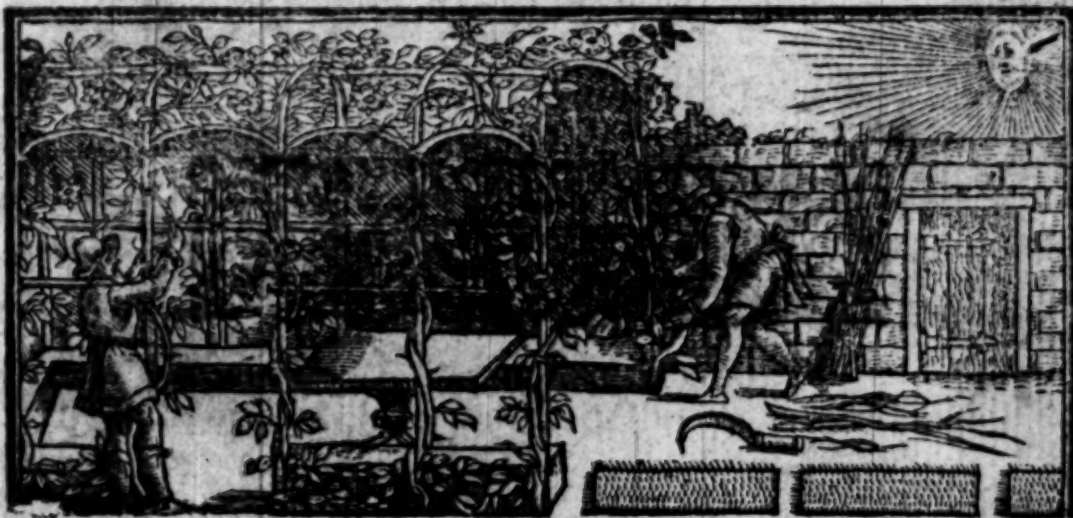
¶ The Gardeners Labyrinth:

Containing a discourse of the Gardeners life, in
 the yearly travels to be bestowed in his plot of
 earth, for the vse of a Garden: with instructions for
 the choise of Seedes, apt times for sowing, set-
 ting, planting, and watering, and the ves-
 sels and instrumentes serving to
 that vse and purpose:

Wherein are set forth diuers Herbers, Knots and Mazes,
 cunningly handled for the beautifying of Gardens.

Also the Physicke benefits of eche Herbe, Plant, and Flower, with
 the vertues of the distilled waters of euery of them,
 as by the sequel may further appere.

GATHERED, ONE OF THE BEST APPROVED WRI-
 ters of Gardening, Husbandrie, and Physicke: by
 Iohn Wolfe.



¶ PRINTED AT LONDON
 by Iohn Wolfe.

1586.



**¶ Henrici Dethicki ad lectorem
Carmen.**

Coelum, aquor, tellus, nunc, lumina, flumina, fructus,
Præstat, fundit, habet, sole, vapore, fimo.
Hortus præstat olus, præstant Pomaria pomæ:
Cuncta vigent, magno partæ labore viri.
Urbis honos hortus, florum, speculatio grata,
Es sunt herbarum pharmaca grata viris.
Falce, ligone, filo, qui dissecat, effodit, ornat,
Plantam, terram, hortos, hæc documenta tenet.
Sano, agro, cæco, vis vitium, pharmaca, visum?
Lingua, mentis, manu, hæc perlege, discere, sene.



PRINTED AT LONDON

JOHN WATTS

To the right honourable and his singular good
Lord, Sir William Cecill, knight of the most noble Or-
der of the Garter, Baron of Burghley, Lord high Trea-
surer of England, &c. Henry Dethicke wisheth
long health, with increase
of honour.



Considering (right honourable) my
promise plighted vnto my friend,
(lately entrered) I was inforced to
performe the perfecting of this
English Treatise: otherwise I had
not so willingly attempted to solli-
cite your honour with this vulgar
stile. And sithens that reason
requireth, and dutie demaundeth, the satisfiing of
the trust in me reposed, I doubt not but that mine enter-
prise will be allowed. Vnreasonable were I, and destitute
of all humanitie, if that I should obstinately neglect, the
earnest desire of the deceased: likewise, worthy were I to
be deemed vndutifull, and altogether vngratefull, if that I
should omit anie oportunitie, whereby I might encrease so
rare a commoditie to my countrey. I therefore respecting
the request of my friend, and tendering the profite of my
country, haue craued herein (as heeretofore in all other
mine affaires) your honours protection, and the rather, for
that I finde none (your honour excepted) neither in aunti-

boog is ligned **THE EPISTLE** of T
ent aucthoritie, neither by common consent, neither by
present prooffe, that hath more warily, and wisely, warded
the weale of this countrey. In fine, to auoid tediousnesse, I
haue omitted all circumstances, whereby I might displaie
the sundrie commodities and rare rudimentes, contained
in this painfull, and gainefull discourse: but surceasing to
trauise farther in this terrestriall Gardeners Laby-
rinth, I wish vnto your honour by dayly Prayer, the frui-
tion of the Heauenly Paradise, crauing of the Omnipot-
tent and prouident God, the guider of that gorgeous Gar-
den, that he would vouchsafe to graunt vnto you, the
sweete sauour of his chiefe fragrant floures, that is,
his comfort to cleaue fast vnto you, his mercy
to keepe you, and his grace to guide you,
nowe and euermore.

Your honours most humble
HENRY DETHICKE.



A Table expressing the Contents of every Chapter, contained in this Labyrinth.

The first deviding of Garden plottes with their commodities in time past.
 Chap. 1.
The diligence required of a Gardener, and what encrease a well laboured earth yeeldeth. Chap. 2
The choosing of a Garden plotte, with the goodnesse of the earth. Chap. 3
Of playner instructions for the chosing of a battell ground, with other matter necessary. Chap. 4
Of the placing of a garden plotte, with the Commodities thereunto belonging. Chap. 5.
What aire is noyous to men, & to plants, and why a Garden should bee placed night to the owners house. Chap. 6
The forme of Inclosures inuented by the Romanes. Chap. 7.
The inuentions of erecting a stronge hedge for the defence of a Garden. Chap. 8.
The cause why dunging of Gardens was mistakid in aunient time, neare vnto houses, and what dung is best allowed for pot-herbes. Chap. 9
Of the kindes of dung, and which is commended for a Garden. Chap. 10
What is to be considered before the letting of seedes. Chap. 11
Of the framing of Herbert Walkes, and Alleys, in a Garden. Chap. 12
The forme of disposing quarters, beds, & Borders, with the sowing, choyse and defence of the seedes, with the weeding of beddes. Chap. 13
The artely disposing of Beddes for the encrease of kitchen herbes, with the witty defences to bee vsed after the seedes are bestowed. Chap. 14

The workmanly deviding of Beddes for rootes and herbes. Chap. 15
The inuentions for the defence of seedes committed to the earth, that they may not bee endamaged by birds, nor creeping things. Chap. 16
The witty helps for the Garden seedes to bee employed before and after the sowing of them, least that they should bee harmed by outward or inward injuries. Chap. 17
Of the nature and election of sundry seedes, with the apt times commended for the sowing of most kitchen herbes. Chap. 18.
Certaine precepts for the sowing of delectable flowers and tender herbes, with the obseruations of the Moone. Chap. 19
The commended times to bee obserued in the bestowing of seedes and plants in the earth with the discommodities. Chap. 20.
Of certaine curious instructions for the bestowing of seedes, and daymye herbes. Chap. 21
In what space of time seedes committed to the earth in the encrease of the Moone, commonly shooke vnto. Chap. 22
What diligence is to be had in weeding of a Garden. Chap. 23
Of the times of watering beddes, and what maner of water ought to be vsed for plant, with the inuentions of Vesselles. Chap. 24
Of the removing of plantes, with the breaking and shipping of sundry sorts. Chap. 25
Certaine instructions for the gardening and preferuing of kitchen herbes and rootes, with flowers, daintie Herbes and

The table.

and rootes to the vse of phisicke.
 Chap. 26
 The remedies which preuaile against
 Snails, Cankers, and Garden fleas,
 and Earthwormes. Chap. 17
 The helps against Garden Moles, Ants,
 Quats, Fleas, & Frogs, washing herbes,
 trees and fruites. Chap. 18
 Of rare practises against serpents of the
 Garden, and other venomous thinges,
 hurting aswell men, as kitchen herbes,
 trees and fruites. Chap. 29

Of the helps against Scorpions, Todes,
 Garden flies, Weasles, and all other
 beastes, washing herbes and fruites.
 Chap. 30
 Of remedies against haile, lightnings, te-
 pests and beatings downe of Kitchen
 herbes, trees, and fruites. Cha. 31
 Of the helps against frostes, blasting of
 trees, mistes, and mist. Chap. 32
 Certaine proper knots devised for Gar-
 dens, to bee placed at the owners dis-
 cretion.

The Chapters contained in the second parte.

The secrets in sowing and remoouing
 the garden Colewort, with the pli-
 sicke helps of the Colewort, and di-
 stilled water thereof. Chap. 1
 The order of sowing the Beete, with the
 phisicke helpe of the Beete, and water
 distilled thereof. Chap. 2
 The order in sowing or letting of the
 Beete, with the commodities thereof.
 Chap. 3
 The order in sowing or letting of Arage
 with the phisicke helpe thereof. Cha. 4
 The sowing and remoouing of Sperage,
 with the phisicke helpe thereof. Cha. 5
 The ordering & sowing of Sporage, with
 the phisicke helpe thereof. Chap. 6
 The ordering and sowing of the garden
 Sorrell, with the phisicke helpe of the
 Sorrell and Pimpernell, and the water
 distilled thereof. Chap. 7
 The ordering and sowing of Louige, &
 Buglosse, with the phisicke helpe of
 them both, and the water thereof.
 Chap. 8

The figure of the Fornace named Bal-
 neum Marie. Fol. 16
 The order of sowing, remoouing and set-
 ting the Marigolde, with the phisicke
 helpe of Marigolds, & water thereof.
 Chap. 9
 The ordering and sowing Parsley, with
 the phisicke helpe of Parsley, and the
 water distilled thereof. Cha. 10
 The ordering and sowing of Garden and
 wilde running Time, with the phisicke
 helpe of Time, and water thereof.
 Chap. 11
 The ordering and sowing of White and
 Holihoke, with the phisicke helpe of
 the Mintos and Mallores, and water
 thereof. Chap. 12
 The ordering and sowing of the Arro-
 choke, with the phisicke helpe thereof.
 Chap. 13
 The ordering and sowing of Rillue
 and Sactorye, with the phisicke helpe
 both of them and the water thereof.
 Chap. 14
 The

The table.

- The ordering and sowing of Lettuce with the phisike helpes of Lettuce and the water thereof distilled. Chap. 15
- The ordering and sowing of Parselane, and Rokes, with the phisike helpes of them both, & of the water of parselane. Chap. 16
- The ordering and sowing of Chervill, Smallage, Targan, and Cresser, with the phisike helpes of Chervill and garden Cresses, and the distilled waters thereof. Chap. 17
- The ordering and sowing of Bucks horn, Strawberry, and Mustard seede, with the phisike helpes of them all and water distilled from them. Chap. 18
- The ordering and sowing of Leekes, & Ciuies, with the phisike helpes of the Garden Leek, and water thereof. Chap. 19.
- The ordering and sowing of the Onion, with the phisike commodities of the Onion and water thereof. Chap. 20
- The ordering and sowing of Garlike, with the phisike helpes of Garlike, and the water thereof. Chap. 21
- The inconueniences of Garlike our of Plini. Fol. 103
- The ordering and sowing of the Scallion and Squill Onion, with the phisike helpes thereof. Chap. 22
- The ordering of Garden Saffron, with the phisike helpes thereof. Chap. 23
- The ordering and sowing of Nauwew, with the phisike benefites thereof. Chap. 24
- The ordering and sowing of the Rape, and Turnupe, with the phisike helpes of the Rape, and water thereof. Chap. 25.
- The ordering and sowing of Radshe, with the phisike benefites of Radshe and the water thereof. Chap. 26
- The ordering and sowing of Parsnep, and carots, with the phisike helpes of them & the water of Parsnep. Cha. 27
- The ordering and sowing of the garden Poppy, with the phisike helpes of poppy and the water thereof. Chap. 28
- The ordering and sowing of Cucumbers with the phisike commodities thereof. Chap. 29
- The ordering and sowing of the Gourd, with the phisike helpes of the same, & the water thereof. Chap. 30
- The helpes and sowing of the Pompons, Mellons, and muske Mellons, with the phisike commodities of the Pompons and Mellons, and the distilled water of Mellons. Chap. 31
- Worthy instructions about the setting and sowing of sundry phisike herbes, fragrant herbes and flowers, and of the Blessed thistle, with the phisike helpes of the Thistle, and the water thereof. Chap. 32
- The setting and sowing of the herb Angelica, with the phisike helpes thereof. Chap. 33
- The sowing of the herbe Valerian, with the phisike helpes of the same, and the water of the herbe and roote thereof. Chap. 34
- The bestowing of Bitonye, with the phisike commodities of the same, and the vertues of the Water thereof. Chap. 35
- The bestowing of Louge, with the phisike helpes, and vertues of the water thereof. Chap. 36
- The bestowing of Elecampane, with the phisike helpes of the same, and the water distilled of the herbe and roote thereof. Chap. 37

FINIS TABULAE.



Authors from whom this

work is selected.

Plinie

Cicero

Columella

M. Cato

Varron, Tremelius

Varro

Florentinus

Palladius Rutilius

Virgil

Didymus

Quicen

Democritus

Dyophanes

Hesiodus

Africanus

Apuleius

D. Niger

Theophrastus

Anatolius

Pamphilus

Ruellia

Paxanius

Benitus

Marcus Gatinaria

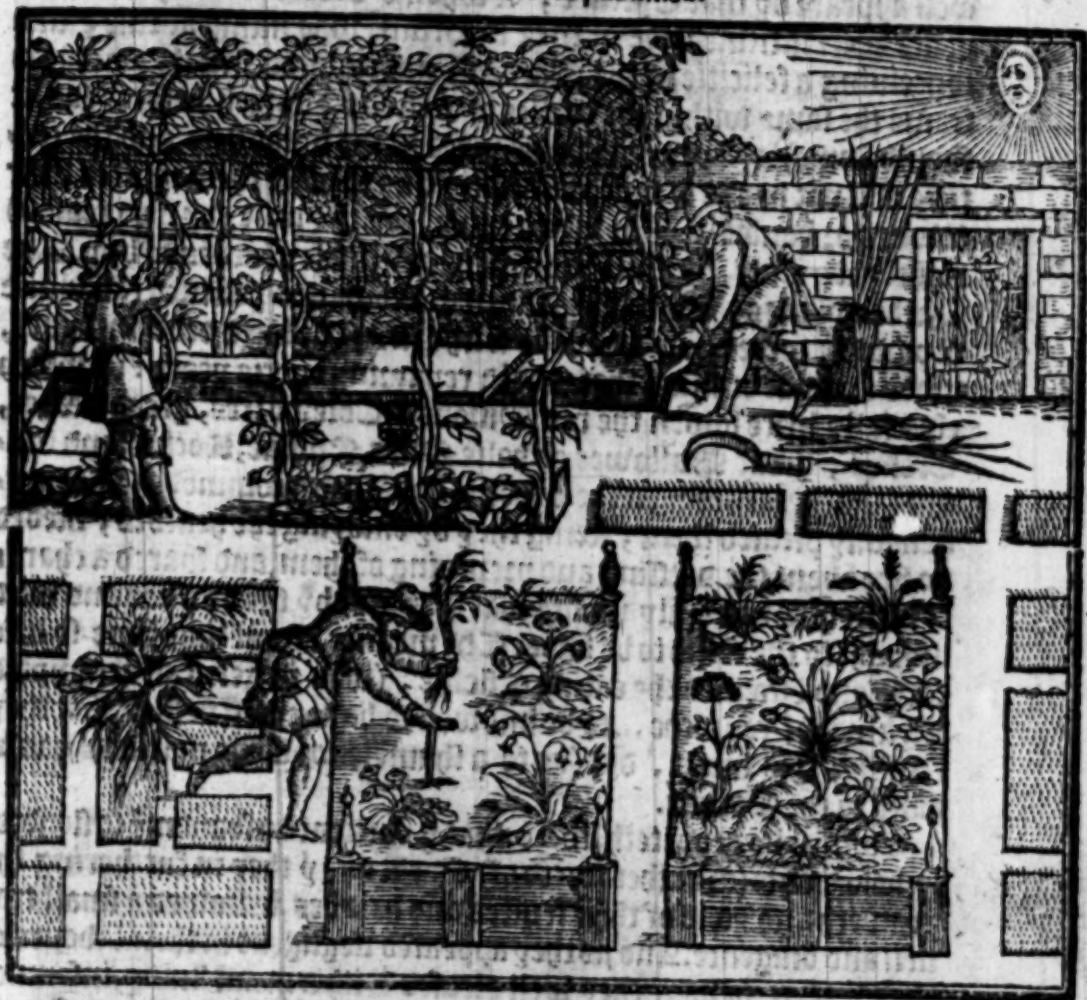
Albertus

Philofratus

Archibius

Galenevia

The Gardener's Labyrinth. Containing the manifold trauels, great cares, and diligence, to bee yeerely bestowed in euerie earth, for the vse of a Garden: with the later inuentions, and rare secrets theretunto added (as the like) not heretofore published.



The inuention of Garden plottes by whom first deuised, and what commodities founde by them, in times past. Chap. 1.



He worthy Plinie (in his six booke) reporteth, that a Garden plotte in the Auncient time at Rome, was none other, than a small & simple inclosure of ground, which through the labour and diligence of the husbandman, yielded a commoditie and yeerely revenue vnto him. But after yeeres (that man more este-

A

med

med of himselfe, and sought an easier life) deuised and framed this ground plotte, for the minde, as for pleasure and delight: as may well appeare by that Epicure, of whome Cicero maketh mention, in his booke intituled *De natura Deorum*, who liuing at ease, and conceiuing a felicitie in the Garden, indeuoured first to place and frame the same within the walles of Athens, which before (as it should seeme) lay open, and vndefended in the wilde field, and the culture of it not had in so much estimation, as to place them nigh to their townes or houses: For which cause, both Plinie (by good reason) rightly attribute, the inuention of the delectable Garden to him. The Garden plottes, which the Auncient Romanes possessed (as Plinie reporteth) were onely set about with trees, hauing a dead inclosure, made onely of bushes, that needed repaying euerie yeare: in which especially were sowne the red Onions, Colewortes, great Leekes, Cresses, great Hallowes or holie Dkes, Endiue, Rocket, and sundry sallat Pearbes: In these they founde such a commoditie, as maruellously pleased them, seeing they by enioying the hearbes, needed no fire about the dressing and preparing of them, and spared a charge of flesh, besides a daily profite that they got, by the hearbes and wood brought to the Citie to be solde. The meaner sort of that time so little cared and esteemed the eating of fleshe, (who in generall accompted it a kinde of reproche, to be knowen to haue eaten fleshe) that they refusing this taunt, did (as to a Shambles or fleshe market) haunt daily to the Garden.

Columella reporteth lib. 10. that y^e Ancient husbandme so slenderly looked vnto (or rather sozed of) Gardens, y^e they in furthering the groweth and yeld of their fruites and hearbes, bestowed a small trauell and diligence. And as they appeared negligent in their labours of the Garden, so were they well pleased with a mean lining, inso much that the common sort fedde and liued willingly on grosse and simple hearbes. But after the age and people were reformed, and brought by the instructio of the Epicure, to a more delight of themselves, in coming to feede on daintie hearbes and Sallates, with meats delectable, and taking an earnest care for the pleasing of their mouths, they laboured then to become skilfull, and to vse a greater care about the ordering and apt dressing of Garden plots, by well fencing and comely furnishing of their ground, with sundry needfull and delectable trees, plants,

plants, and hearbes : in which trauels and diligence of the husbandmen, so good successe and commoditie ensuing, procured not onely the willing carriage of hearbs, fruits, and other commodities farre off to be exercised vnto Cities and market towncs, by which these thzough the sale obtained a daily gaine and yearly reuencw, for the aide of their household charges, but allured them also to place and frame gardens, as well within Cities and Townes as fast by, that a cost bestowed, might after possesse the recreation and delight of mindes, besides the proper gaine made by the fruits, floures, and hearbs, gathered in them. The Garden plottes at length, grew so common among the meaner sort, that the charge and the chiefest care of the same, was committed vnto the wife, insomuch that these accounted not the wife of the house, to be a huswife in deede, if she bestowed not a paine and diligence as Cato reporteth in the weeding, trimming, and dressing of the Garden, but to be bziise, and leauing further to report of antiquitie, I thinke it high time to declare the effects and comoditie of this worke taken in hand, and first to intreate of the care, helpes, and secretes, to be learned and folowed in the Garden ground : All which in a pleasant maner, shall after be vttered in distinct Chapters, to the furtherance and comoditie of many Gardeners, and all such hauing pleasure therein.

What care and diligence is required of euerie Gardener : to these, what increase and comoditie a well laboured earth yeeldeth. Chap. 1.

THe husbandman or Gardener, shall enioy a most commodious and delectable Garden, which both knoweth, can, and will orderlie dresse the same: yet not sufficient is it to a gardener, that he knoweth, or would the furtherance of the garden, without any cost bestowed, which the works & labours of the same require : nor the will again of the workman, in doing & bestowing of charges, shall smally auaille, without he haue both art and skil in the same. For that cause, it is the chiefest point in euerie facultie and busines, to vnderstand and know what to begin and follow : as the learned Columella out of Varro-nians Tremellius aptly vttereth. The person which shall enioy or haue in a readines these three, & wil purposely or w diligence frame to him a well dressed garden, shall after obtaine these two commodi-ties,

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

ties, as vtilitie and delight: the vtilitie, yeldeth the plentie of herbes, floures, and fruits right delectable: but the pleasure of the same procureth a delight, and (as Varro writeth) a iucunditie of minde. For that cause a Garden, shal woorthily be handled & dyssed vnto the necessarie vse and commoditie of mans life, next for health, and the recovery of strength by sickness webled: as the singular Palladius Rutilius hath learnedly vttered, and the skilfull Florentinus, that wrote cunningly, of husbandry in the Greke tongue, certayne yeres before him: Lastly by sight vnto delectation, and iucunditie through the fragrancie of smell: but most of all, that the same may furnish the owners, and husband-mans table, with sundry seemely and daintie dishes, to him of small cost. The Garden grounde (if the same may be) ought rather to be placed nere hand, wherby the owner or Gardener may with more ease be partaker of such commodities growing in the Garden, and both oftner refozt, and vse his diligence in the same. So that this is the whole care and duetie required of euerie owner and Gardener, in their plot of ground. Yet may I not be vnmindfull, that the Garden doth also require a dunging, at the apt times: of which in the proper place we shal after intreat.

What consideration and choosing is to be vsed in any Garden plot: with the goodnesse and worthinesse of euerie earth. Chap. 3.

AS to the nature & goodnesse of a Garden ground, the especialler that ought to be eschued, are a bitter, and salt earth of taste, if so be we meane to make a fertill, commodious, & well yelding ground: for these two natures of earth, were very much disliked in an ancient time, as may appeare by the skilfull Poets Virgill, who saith that euerie earth is not allowed or commended, for the yelde of Garden herbes. For which cause, the minde of the auncient husband men is, that the Gardener by taking vp a clod of Earth, should artly trie the godnes of it after this maner: in considering whether the earth be neither vnte and bare, nor leane by sande, lacking a mixture of perfite earth: nor the same founde to be wholly Chalke, nor naughtie sand: nor barraine granell, nor of the glistering powder or dust of a leane stonie ground, nor the earth continuall moyst, for all these be the speciall defaults of a good and perfite earth. The best ground for a Garden,

den, is the same iudged to be, which in the Summer time is neither verie drye, nor clepe, nor sandie and rough, nor endamaged with gapings, procured by heat of the Sommer, as the worthy Didymus, in his Greeke instructions of husbandrie writeth. Wherefore the earth which in Sommer time is wont to be drye, either perisheth or loseth all the seedes sowne, and plants set in it, or yeeldeth those thinne, and weak, growing on the ground. For the clepe ground of it selfe, over fast holdeth; but the sandie and rough, in a contrarie maner: so that neither is wont to nourish plants, nor retaine water. Therefore an apt earth for a garden, shall you readily trie & finde out if the same thorough wet and dissolved with water, you shall see to haue a much clammy and softnesse. In which ground, if a waterinesse shall ex- ceede, then shall you iudge the same disagreeable and unfruitfull: if dissolving the earth with water, you shall finde the same verie clam- mye or much cleaving to the hand and fingers, as it were waie, this earth shall you account, as wholly vniprofitable. Plinie willeth that a garden plotte before all other matters done to it, be verie well clen- sed of stone, and to these, that the earth growe not full of chappes, or but few to be seene, least the sunne beames entring betwene, may so scorche and burne the rootes of the plants. For which cause, the best and gentle or worthiest earth that be chosen, in which you mind to commit your seedes: or for the same, that the nourse as a mother, may often agree to the fruite, or yeelde to bee an aider and further- er to it.

Certaine plainer instructions, much furthering the Gardener, in the knowledge and choise of a good and battell ground, with other matters necessarye. Chap. 4.

The Gardener minding to trye and know a fat earth, for the vse of a garden, shall worke after this maner: in taking a litle clod of the earth, and the same to sprinkle with faire water, kneading it well in the hand: which after appearing clammy, and cleaving or sticking to the fingers, doth undoubtedly witness that earth to haue a fatnes in it. An other tryall of a battell earth, may thus be purchased, if you digge vp a rotten clod in a maner blacke, and the same able i- nough to couer it selfe with y^e groweth of the oson grasse, & appearing also of a mixt colour, which earth, if it be found thinne and close may well

well be fastned and made clamorie, through the adioyning and mixing of a fat earth to it. The garden ground doth also require a sweetness to consist in it, which the Gardener shall easilie find and know, by taste of it: if so be hee take vp a clodde of the earth in anie part of the ground which most misliketh him, and moistening the clod with faire water in an earthen pot harde, both after the dipping of the finger in this moist earth and water, let a drop softly fall on the tongue, he shall incontinent feele and perceiue (by reason of the taste) of what condition the same is. Further, euerie fat earth being reasonable loose, is evermore commended and chosen, which of it selfe requireth small labour, and yeldeth the most encrease. But worst of all others is that ground, which shall be both drie and grosse, leane and colde. In the kindes of ground, the chalke is to bee refused: which properlie the auncients name, the cleyish, and reddish earth. The worthy Varro commendeth the same ground, which of it selfe being gentle and plyable, yeldeth properlie walwurts. The same earth doeth Columella greatly allow, which of the owne accord yeldeth or bringeth forth wilding or Crabbe trees, young springes, the slowe or Bullefe trees, Elme trees, and such like. So that a battell ground, is on such wise found and knowne: the rather of the crescent thinges, seene in it of the owne accord: yet of necessitie may euerie ground well agree, to be mixed and turned in with dunge. Florentious uttereth an other tryall of a fruitfull ground: if so be the Gardener diggeth vp a furrow, of a foote and a halfe deepe, and filleth the same againe with the owne earth, which in short time after gapeth or choppeth, this no doubt, is a weake and leane earth: but if the earth thus ordered, swelleth or retcheth out, then is it a sure note, that the same is a battell and fat ground. And this is noted to be a meane earth, which after the digging and raking even, gapeth but a litle. This I thought not good to be couered, nor willingly ouerpasse: that a garden plotte situated or standing neare to a mote, or compassed by a mote, is not alwaies laudable, in that the seedes bestowed in the same, and diuers plants set in it, do lightly and soone through the water vaporizing forth waie olde: yea the fruites (whether those shalbe of the hearbes or trees) are for the more part caused vnpleasant, and ouer moist. Further conceiue, that a garden ground, ought to bee of a moderate increase, and easie dressing: which

which neither is verie moist, nor ouer drie of it selfe. To these such a earth is greatly commended as being new digged, by whos couet to it: and that crows especially follow the new casting of the digger. If the earth shall be found naughtie or vnfruitfull, as the Cleyie, sandie, and chalkie, then ought the same to be amended, after the mind of the skilfull, with mearle and dung laide three foote deepe, and well turned in with the earth, if this bee perceiued ouer thin and leane, then to be mixed and helpen by a fat earth: or to a barren and ouer drie ground, may be mixed a moist and verie fat earth. A waterie ground is made the better, if the same be mixed with a sandie or small grauelie earth, and deepe Alleys made, for the conueighing and shifting of the water falling in the night. But to vse such a tedious pains in these, Plinie accounteth it a madness: for what fruite or gaine may be hoped after, in bestowing such a trauaile and diligence in the like ground plotte? To conclude, euerie reasonable earth, may verie much be holpen through the wel dunging, and labouring of the Gardener, of which matter (in the proper place) wee meane fully to intreate.

Of the placing and standing of a Garden plotte, with the necessarie benefit of water to a garden, and other matters profitable.

Chap. 5.

It is right necessarie (saith Varro) to place gardens neare to the Citie, aswell for the benefit of pothearbes and rootes, as all manner of sweete smelling flowers, that the Citie greatly needeth. Where these placed in a soile farre off that they can not so conueniently and in due time be brought to the market to be solde, in such places are altogether disallowed, and thought frivolous for the turne. Cato doth verie much commend the Garden plotte placed neare to the Citie in which both young trees to beare by vines, & willow or other trees be planted nigh to water sides & in all places waterie: and that through the garden ground, water or springes be seene running. To these the seedes of most hearbes committed into a well dunged, dressed, and faire or large open plot, in which besides all kindes of fruites, for the vse of man, workemanlie planted and set in apt times of the yreare. This skilfull Cato also willeth, that all kindes of garden grounds be placed and framed neare to the Citie, aswell for the Garland or Boske, flowers

floures, as all maner round and delectable rotes, with the sweete and pleasant smelling trees: as all the kindes of the Roses, the sweete Jacemine, the Eglantine byar, the Myrtle tree, and all others of like sozte, sowed and planted in due seasons of the yeare. But a garden plotte, ouely seruing for the vse of pothearbes and the kitchen, ought especiallie to be a battell ground, sufficient moyst of it selfe, and well turned in: or wo:kemanly laboured with dung. Garden plottes ought to be placed, farre from Barnes, Day loftes and Stables, if the same possibly may be refused, or otherwise chosen for the turne: in that the chaffe or dust of strawes (as enimie to them) the plants hardlie brooke and suffer, insomuch that the very strawes blowne abroad with the winde, and falling on hearbes, doe greatlie annoy and harme them: as the singular Florentinus in his Greake instructions of husbandrie skilfullie uttereth. For these, saith he, by cleauing to the plants, in the falling, pearse the leaues, which once pearced, are incontinent burned with them. All gardens as well prosper by the dunging with rotes, as with the proper dung allowable: yet dunging the garden earth, with the branches and leaues of trees, is of the skilfull Gardeners verie much disallowed, as vnprofitable and noyous to hearbes.

As to the well standing of a garden behoueth: the aptest and most laudable placing of a garden plotte shalbe, if the plaine ground lying somewhat a slope, shal haue a course of spring water running through by several parts. But this course of water, running through the garden plot, may in no wise be bigge. And the smalnesse of the labouring and dwelling of a garden ground, is more of yelde, then the largenesse of it, not laboured in a maner at all.

It behoueth to haue a Well in a garden, vnlesse some running water as eyther ditch or small riuer bee neare adioyning: for that a sweete water sprinkled on young plants, and hearbes, giueth a speciall nourishment. If a Well be lacking in the garden, then digge a deepe pit, in some conuenient place of the garden: although it may be a painefull labour for the Gardener, to drawe water out of the same. For a garden ground needeth often to be watered, through which all seedes committed to the earth, as Plinie reporteth, both sooner breake forth, and speedier spread abroad. What a pit with water of long continuance, may be purchased, the same at that time Columella

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

9

moella willesh to be digged, when as the Sunne shall obtaine oꝛ occupie the last degrees of Virgo: which is in the moneth of September, befoze the Equinodiall harvest. foꝛ the vertue then of wel-springs, are thꝛoughly tried and founde out: at which time thꝛough the longe oꝛ ought of Summer, the earth lacketh the due moisture of raine. If a well oꝛ pit to purpose cannot bee made in the Garden: then frame vp a square pit oꝛ Cisterne leaued in the bottome with bricke and Lime to receiue the raine water falling: with whiche in the hottest Summer dayes, you may water the beddes of the Garden. But if all these maner of helpes and waies, shall faile the Gardener, oꝛ cannot well be compassed in the Garden ground, then shal he dig the ground after the mind of Palladius Rutilius, thꝛee oꝛ foure fote the deeper oꝛ lower. foꝛ the beddes on such wise oꝛdered, being weel manly laboured and sowed, may the better endure, thꝛough the lowe standing, the whole oꝛought of the Summer daies. In the Garden ground besides, this shall you obserue, that when the Allies oꝛ pathes of the beddes be ouer cloyed with water, to digge deepe gutters here & there after your discretion, in suche oꝛder, that the water falling and running along, may be guided into a conuenient pitte, made at the lower side oꝛ ende of the Garden, foꝛ that onely purpose. Here further learne, that what Garden plot the nature of the moisture helpeth not, the same may you aptly deuise into parts, in conuerting the spaces, digged & dressed foꝛ the winter time to lie open to the South, and those prepared foꝛ the Summer time like, vnto the North quarter.

What ayre commended for the benefite of a Garden, and which bee

soyous as well to Man as the Planets: and the reason why

Garden plottes ought to be placed nigh to the

owners house.

Chap. 6.

Euery ground-plot lying neare to the Citie, aswel the Garden as Orchard, ought to be placed neere to the house, foꝛ the oftner recourse & diligence to be bestowed of the owner: and the Garden especially to bee laboured and well turned in with dung: thꝛough whose iuice and satning, the earth may yelde hearbes of the owne accorde. As touching the aire commended foꝛ a Garden, the same being cleare and temperate is best allowed, in that this not onely cherissheth and

prospereth the hearbes growing in it, but procureth a delight and comfort to the walkers therein. An euill ayre in the contrarie manner, troubled with the vapours of standing pittes, ditches, and such like mixed to it, doth not only annoy & corrupt the Plants & hearbes growing in that Garden fast by, but choke and dull the Spirits of men, by walking in the same. Besides, the windes biting, and froles mortifying, doe both harme and destroy Plantes. Auicen writing of the ayre, doth in skilfull manner utter, that the same ayre, which after the Sun setting is some colde, and after the Sun rising speedely hote, is both subtile and healthfull to man. So that a contrarie ayre to this, worketh the contrarie to man and Plants. Yet that aire is accounted worser, which seemeth as it were to wryng or binde harde together the Heart: yea making straight or lettynge the attraction of ayre. The learned Neapolitane Rutilius besides these reporteth, that the subtilenesse or healthfulnesse of ayre, doe declare those places free from low ballies, and stinking mists or fogs in the night, that might annoy both men and the Plantes. Here it doth not much disagree from the matter, to write in generall, of the qualities of the windes: and of these, in the briefest manner. First, the Easterly and Westerly windes, be in a manner temperate of quality, as betwene a hotenesse and coldenesse: yet of the two, the Easterly windes be knowen drier. Further the Easterly windes, are for the moze part hotter, than the Westerly, and the Westerly by report of the Ancient somewhat moze moist, than the Easterly. Of all the windes, for the benefite of the Garden, is the Southwest winde especially commended: as the worthy Florentinus in his Greke rules, and others of experience affirme.

Besides these, as vnto the clemencie or temperatenesse of ayre, and healthfulness of the place belongeth, a Garden plot in cold countries, ought in a contrarie manner to be placed, as either to the East or South quarter: if the same be such a plot of ground, which both containeth trees & Plants or Herbes comming vp in it, least the Garden plot excluded from these two parts, by the object or standing against of some most great and high hill, be so mipped, frozen, and withered, with the extreame colde long continuing, or the Garden plot otherwise farre distant from the comfort of the Sunne on the South part, or els the Sun only shining low and weake, at the West quarter of the same.

The

The singular Cato willetth, that the Garden, if a man can, be placed at the foote of an hill : and the same beholding or lying open to the South, especially in a healthfull place. For a Garden plot thus defended by an high hil, on the South part, and all the day comforted by the open face of the South quarter : is procured to yeld the sweeter and timelier Fruits, in the seasons of the yeare. But in hote Regions or Countries, let the open place of a garden grounde, be rather situated towarbes the North quarter : which may through the lyke standing auaille, as well to health of bodie and quickning of the Spirits, as to profite and pleasure.

This besides conceiue, that the placing of a garden-ground near to a Fenne or Parrish, is euerie where to be misliked and refused : if the same lie open towarbes the South or West, and yearely in the Summer time is accustomed to be drie : for on suche wise hapning, the ayre thereabout gathered vp, doth in the falling againe, ingender either the Pestilence, or wicked vermin, much harming the garden-plot lying nigh to it. There is also a great regarde to be had to the water, mote or ditch, standing nigh or round about y garden-ground: whether this for the moze part be wont to vapoarate or breathe forth any noysome ayre, that may both to men and the Plants be harmefull. For peculiar or proper is the same (or rather such is the proper-tye) of verie many still waters and Notes. So that it is the counsell of the skilfull (if anie like be knowen) to refraine from placing anie garden-plot or Orchard, if the owner may choose, neare to the same.

The forme of the inclosures, which the Husbandmen, and Romanes
in time past inuented, Chap. 7.

As muche as the same may bee thought a mere madnesse, to haue chosen out a fitte plotte of grounde, and to cast, digge, and dresse it seemely in all pointes : yet lying open day and night, as well to the incursions and common hant, as to the iniuries to be wrought and done by robbers or theues, sonles and beasts : for that cause, I here mind to intreat of the sundry maners of fencing, & compassing in of the garden-grounds in auncient time. First, the skilfull and warie husbandmen in time past, being those of good abilitie, built them

walles about of Free Stone artly layde and moxtered together, and some did, with baked brycke like handled. Others of lesser abilitie, and of the meaner soyt, framed them inclosures, with stones hand-somely laid one vpon an other with moxter or Cley: & some of them couched the broad Slate stones, with other bigge and large stones (in lyke order aboute) where suche dwelt by quarries of Stone. But verie manie of the baser and poorer soyt, made them fences and wallles about, with mudde of the ditch, dung, chaffe, and strawes cut short, and well mixed together. Others there were, whiche with bigge Canes set vpright, by small poles bounde together, so fenced their Garden plotte, in handsome maner rounde about. Some also with yong Willowe trees, set by certaine distances, and the drie blacke thorne (purchased from the wood) being bounde in (betwene the spaces) so framed their inclosure: but this manner of inclosing wrought or built by Arte the skilfuller named, a dead and rough inclosure, made especially for the keeping and defending of Cattell out of the Garden ground. Yet the hedge or inclosure erected after this maner, required euerie yeare to be newe repayred and bounde vp in the places needfull, to the tediousnesse and great paines of the husbande man.

The learned Columella in his husbandry reporteth, that the Romans in tyme past, fenced and inclosed their Garden grounds, with bigge quarters set vpright, and Poles with lathes, verie thick fastned to them, by smal rods of the Oser tree walling them in. Some boarded large holes through bigge bodies or stockes of trees, that quarters or great poles made for the purpose might passe through them, either by two or three together, in reasonable distance, with payle boarde rayled and fastned along to them. Some also through the timber of trees (set into the earth) fastned bigge poles or long quarters rounde about, much like to the vsuall Cattell poundes in our age. But some attaining to more skill, erected as Varro reporteth, a naturall inclosure, set about with the black or white thorne trees, & yong willows: which had besides the rootes of a quick-set hedge, that in tyme growing vp, withstood tempestes, windes, landclouds, yea fire the consumer of all thinges put to it. The Ancient husband men did besides these inuent the casting vp of bancks & countermyres of earth, round about the Garden plotte, much like to the trenches in tyme of warre about

about Bulwarkes and Tents: and these they especiallie made neare to high waies, or by rivers in Marshes or fens lying open, or other fieldes, that the garden plot might on such wise bee defended, from the damages and harmes both of Theeves Cattel, and Land-floods.

For a playner conceiving of the abovesaid, learne these following, that the ancient husbandmen did cast up and made a deepe ditch about their garden ground (standing in the open fieldes) which might receive all the raine-water falling: and this they so digged with a slope passage, whereby the water might runne the easier and freer from the bottome. The earth and claye cast up on the inside (fast by the brinke) they so wrought together, that hardye any person (after the drying of the counterminers) coulde clyme over the same: Some also made high bankes or counterminers, without a ditch digged about, and the same so served in the open fieldes in stead of a wall.

To be brieve, the inclosure which longest endured, surest, and of least cost, was the same that the Romanes in ancient time made with brambles, and the white thorne laide overlie in bankes, for the better growing up. For this inclosure or hedge (after yeares sprung up) endured by reporte of the learned Cato an infinite time: yea experience in our age, doth likewise confirme the same. For which cause, this inclosure was very much commended of the ancient Romanes, who well conceived and knew, that the bramble decayed or dyed not at any season, except it were digged & plucked quite up by the rootes. For they learned by practise, that the bramble singed or scorched with straw flaming, recovered and grew everie yeare after, both stiffer, rougher and thicker together.

The later inventions of erecting a naturall & strong hedge, which in time growing, may prove a most sure defence and safegarde of the Garden. Chap. 8.

The most commendable inclosure for everie garden plot, is a quick set hedge, made with the brambles & white thorne: but the stronger and more defensive hedge is the same, which the singular Democritus in his Greeke instructions of husbandrie (that wrote long before Columella, & Palladius Rusticus) cunningly uttereth, and the

same with ease and small cost after this manner. Gather, saith he, in a due season of the yeare, the seedes found in the redde berries of the biggest and highest Byars (which by a more common name with vs, are called the wilde Eglantine Byars) the through ripe seedes of the bzaibles (running low by the ground) the ripe seedes of the white Thorne, and to these both the ripe Berries, of the Cowberrie and Barberrie trees: this done, mixe and strepe so; a time, al the Berries and seedes, in the blended meale of Tares, vnto the thicknesse of honic: the same mixture lay diligently into olde and untwisted Shippe or Well roapes, or other long woyme roapes, and sitered or broken into shoit peeces, being in a maner starke rotten, in such order; that the seedes bestowed or couched within the soft haire of them, may be preserved and defended from the colde, vnto the beginning of spring. At which time; where you be minded, that the inclosure or hodge shall runne and spring vp: there digge in handson manner, two small furrowes, and these either two or thre foote asunder, and a mans foote and a halfe deepe: into which lay your ropes with the seedes, couering them workemanlike with light earth: and (if need shall require) water by sprinkling, or moisten the seedes; in the same wise againe.

The wortheie Columella (in his husbandrie) and the Neapolitane Palladius Rutilius, writing the like instruction, in a maner, will that the ground-plotte, in which a hedge shall bee erected, bee compassed with two narrow furrowes, digged thre foote distant one from the other, and a mans foote and a halfe deepe: but these to bee made in the Equinoctiall Harvest, at what time the ground shall bee well moistned with showers. The furrowes thus prepared, they appointed to lye open all the winter through: after in the moneth of Februarie, the ropes with the seedes, laide into ech furrowes, to bee covered not thicke ouer with light earth, so; hindering the growth of the seedes: especiallie of the white Thorne: and that this action bee rather wrought, when as the winde bloweth from the South or Southwest: the seedes thus covered with diligence, shall appeare within a moneth either more or lesse, and the tender young Thornes sprung vp to some height, must bee holpen and stayed with Willow twiggies, or other small proppes, set betwixen the emptie spaces, vntill the Thornes, by their farther growth, ioyned

ioyned together, may stay one the other which within few yeares, will grow to be a most strong defence of the Garden or field, & a sure safeguard against outward iniuries. Columella besides willeteth, that a willow or Alder hedge, bee set on either side, and in the middle come or space, betweene the two furrowes, couered and euen raked: that these might so stay the tender thornes, springing vp in either furrow, vnto the time they ioyned, and were growne about this willow hedge, or at least vnto such strength, that they well staied one of the other. Others there are as the famous Diophanes (among the Greeke writers of husbandrie) and with him manie the like, which will a quicke-set hedge to be erected, and made after this maner. The bigger armes or rods of the bramble, they willed to be cut into short portions or parts, and these laide a slope into open furrowes of a span deepe, to bee diligently couered with earth: after to vse about the plants, a daily digging or rearing vp of the earth, and watering of them if neede so requireth, vntill the plants budde forth, and the leaues of the stemmes open, which by this maner of comforting and cherishing, shall grow in few yeares to a strong, sure and continuall hedge.

The Neapolitane Palladius Rutilius instructeth the way & maner of erecting an other quicke-set hedge, on this wise: plant, saith he, young Elder trees, neare three foote a sunder, then the seedes of the brambles, lapped diligently in long lumps of softned and moist Cley or tough earth, lay the same orderly in a shallow furrow, betweene the Elder trees, which artellie couered with light earth, and watering the places if neede so requireth, will within three yeares following, grow to such a strength and largenesse, that the same will bee able enough, to defend the iniuries both of the theefe, and beast. Palladius Rutilius reporteth, that this hedge of brambles after three yeares growth, ought to bee senced with flaming straw: for on such wise handled, it prospereth afterwarde the better. In that the Bramble, as hee saith, through the euerie yeares sencing or burning with straw, ioyneth and increaseth the better: yea through the yearely burning, as the skillfull husband-men affirme, they shote out harder and rougher of prickes.

And this maner, to be briebe, is a generall way of inclosing Garden groundes, with small cost, and easilie perfozmed. Although the

comelier

comlier inclosure or hedge of a Garden be the same, which is made: of the white thorne artely saide: that in few yeares with diligence cut, waxeth so thicke and strong, that hardly any person can enter in to the ground, saving by the garden doze. Yet in sundrie garden groundes be hedges framed with the Myrt tree, although far weaker in resistance: which at this day are made the stronger, through the yearely cutting, both above, and by the sides: yea the same also caused through the like doing to grow the ouener and thicker, to the beautifying of the garden ground, and for other necessarie purposes. To conclude, I haue here offered the making of certaine naturall inclosures for a garden, which may with the meaneest cost be erected in any ground.

The cause why certaine skilfull husbandries in auncient time disliked the dunging of Gardens neere to the house: and what dung best allowed for the kitchen or pothearbes. Chap. 9.

There were in auncient time, as Plinie recordeth, certain wittie husbandmen, that wholly refused & forbade the dunging of gardens placed nigh to the dwelling houses: in that this dunging might not only infect the ayre thereabout, but cause also the crescent things to prone both vntuerier and more corrupt. And in this matter the worthie wyters of husbandrie commended highly the Grecke Poet Hesiodus, which wyting verie cunningly of husbandrie, omitted the dunging of the fields, and garden plots, contented rather to counsell vnto healthfulnes, then willed the same to fertillitie. In so much as it was supposed inough at that tyme, to haue sated the fieldes and garden plots, with the leaues and emptie cobs of the Beanes, Wheatson, Tares, and such like, turned workemantie in with the earth in due season of the yeare, & not to haue employed or dunged the ground with a rotten and pestilent matter, incommodious to man and the Plants. Which wise men haue well found out, in that the sower plants sprung vp in such an earth, yeld for the most part a harmefull qualitie to the dayly feeders on them, hardly to be amended.

Yet for that neither the auncient, nor later husbandmen, seeme to follow the instruction of this precept, nor approue or allow any proper dunging. in prescribing & commending the same in generall: for that cause, I here purpose to intreat in a briebe manner, of the nature and

and vse of the same. But first of all to warne you that a good and
battell grounde needeth small dunging, where a drie and thinne or
leane earth, in contrarie maner requireth plentie of dung. A earth
onely drie (as Maro reporteth) well ioyneth to be often fed, and dili-
gently laboured with fat dung. But the grounde that hath a meane
substance in it, requireth in like maner a meane dunging to bee v-
sed. Further conceiue, that good dung dooth (for the more part) pro-
cure, a good and battell earth the better, yea this helpeth and amen-
deth the euill and naughtie earth: But the euill dung in a contrarie
maner, dooth euermore cause all earthes the woysse: And this beho-
ueth the Gardener and husbandman to knowe, that as the earth not
dunged, is both colde and stiff, euen so the grounde by the ouer-
much dunging, may be burned altogether. For which cause (Colu-
mella reporteth) that more available and better it is, often to dung
the earth, than ouermuch at one time, to bestowe in the grounde.
The earth digged vp to serue for spring, ought to be dunged in the
wane or decrease of the Moone about S. Martins day: that the same
lying all the Winter through, may so be dissolved, against the time of
committing seedes to the earth: and in the moneth of Marche to be
dunged again, that the earth wel moistned with shoures (in the mo-
neth of Aprill) may be procured the apter, for the bestowing of your fi-
ner and daintier seedes in the same. Herein consider the leanenesse
or fatnesse of your earth, in the often dunging of it, and the worthines
of your seedes, which may require a like paines to be bestowed on the
grounde. The plot of earth prepared for the Winter seedes, ought to
be wel turned in with dung about the end of September, & the seedes
committed to the earth, after the grounde bee well moistned with
shoures. The dung in a Garden-plot, for the planting of yong sets
ought not to be colched or laide next to the rootes of the plantes: but
in such order the dung beled, that a thin bed of earth be first made, for
the setting of the yong hearbes: next laide to this, a handsome bed of
dung, as neither too thicke or thinne spread on that earth: aboue that
let an other course of earth bee raked ouer, of a reasonable thicknesse:
which workemanly handled & done, see that your plants be set hand-
some ly into the ground, and in a chosen time. For the earth and beds
(on such wise prepared) helpe that the plants bestowed shal not at all
be burned: neither the heat of the dung, hastily breathe forth to them.

Of the kinds of dung, and which well commended for the dunging of Gardens. Chap. 10.

As touching the worthinesse & excellency of dung, the Greke writers of husbandry (to whom many of the latin Authors consent) affirme that the Dones dung is best, because the same possesseth a mightie hotenesse, for which they willed this dung to be strawed the thinner, and in a maner (as thin to be scattered abroad) as seeds on the earth, whereby the same may so season the earth inestimably, & not on a heap or thick bestowed (as M. Varro reporteth) much like to the dung of cattel thowre abroad on ground. The dung also of the hen and other foules greatly commended for the sournesse, except the dung of geese, ducks, and other waterfoules, for their much & thin dunging. And although this dung last, be weaker than the others, yet may the same be profitable, as the selfsame Varro witnesseth out of the Greke instructions of husbandry. A commendation next is attributed to the Hises dung, in that the same beast for his leisurely eating, diggesth easier, & causeth the better dung, which bestowed in the earth, for that the same is most fertil by nature, bringeth or yeldeth forth least weeds of weeds, and procureth verie much all plants and hearbs: yea this causeth the most sweet and pleasantest hearbes & rootes. The third in place is the Goates dung, being most sowre, which enrichth the sheeps dung, yet fatter. After this, both the Dre & Colo dung: next the Swines dung, worthier than the Dre or Rine, but greatly disallowed of Columella, for the mightie hotnesse, in that the same burneth the seeds immediatly, bestowed in the earth. The vilest and worst of all dungs after the opinion of the Greke writers of husbandry, is the horses and moiles: if either of these be bestowed alone in the earth, yet with the sower dungs mixed, either will profitably be abated or qualified. But the same especially is to be learned and observed of emerie Gardener and husbandman, that they fatten not the earth, if it be possible, with dung of one yeares, for the same, besides that it is of no vtilitie, it engendzeth also many noysome wormes and kindes of vermine. But of the contrarie minde is Columella, who willet the earth to be fatned with dung which hath lien a yeere, and not above, in that the same, as hee reporteth, bringeth forth least weeds, and possesseth as yet

a sufficient strength for the turne. But howe elder the same be, so much the lesse profitable, in that it lesser anayleth: yet the newest dung (saith he) will well agree for the sowles of the felde, in that the same procureth the more yelde of grasse, being bestowed in the moneth of februarye, or March, in colder countries and the more increasing of light. The mud also of a running water, as the ditch or river, may be employed in the stead of dung. The dung besides of three yeares is esteemed verie good, for that in the longer time lying, whatsoeuer this shall haue of the euil qualitie, and stinking savour, the same by that time vapoured forth: and if anie hard matter consisted in the same, the age thoroughly resolved it. Howsoeuer it shall happen, that the earth be, the worst dung of all, for floures and kitchen hearbes is the verie thinnest Askes reported to be, which in nature is hote. For the kinde of dung either killeth or driueth away the Garden fleas, the Molluscs, the canker Molluscs, founde commonly on Colewortes, Snailles and all other creeping thinges walking the stemmes of plantes, and hearbes. The dung which men make (if the same be not mixed with the rubbish, or dust swept out of the house) is greatly misliked, for that by nature it is hote, and burneth the seedes sowne in that earth: so that this is not to be used, vntill the ground be a barren, gravelly or verie loose sand, lacking strength in it, which being on such wise, requireth the more helpe of nourishment and fatning, through this kinde of dung: yet for lacke of the foresaide dungs, the others may be put in vse: so that these with the spade be often changed & dispersed in the ground. Here you may not forget, that a watric Garden-plot requireth the more plenty of dung, but a drie earth needeth the lesser dunging: the one for the daily moisture running in it, being overcolde and stiffe, is through the often applying of the hote dung, resolved and made temperate: And the other drie of it selfe through the heate consisting in it, by much applying of this hote dung, is of the same burned: for that cause the moisture of ground ought to haue store of dung, but the drie small dunging. What if no kinde of dung can be purchased, then in gravelly grounds, it shall be best to dung the same with Chalk: but in Chalky places, & over thick, those dung with gravelly earth: for on such wise Garden-plots, shall not only be caused to be battell & fruitful, but shall also become faire and delectable, as Columella the most diligent

diligent and skilful instructor (of the Romane Gardens) witnesseth: let this last instruction of Plinie be remembred; that at what time soeuer you minde to dung a Garden for yielding of selue weeds, soe that the winde blow then from the West quarter, and the Sonne decreasing of light, and the earth also drie: But for the dunging of a Beddowe (as before vttered) let the same be done in the increase of the Sonne. &c. For by such an obseruation followed, the plentifulnesse of yelo is marueilous much increased: as after the woorthie Grekes, the Latine wyters of husbandrie, haue noted.

What is to bee considered of euery Gardener, before the casting forth and leuelling of the beds, with the disposing of the earth. Chap. 1.

BEfore I intreat of the sowing of Gardens, it behoneth to admonish you, that it much adayleth in a Garden, to frame seemelie walkes and Alleis, for the delight of the owner, by which he may the freelier walke hither and thither in them, & consider thoroughly all the matters wrought & done in the Garden, if the disquietnesse of minde hinder not the benefite of the same. The walkes and Alleis shall to that ende be disposed, that they may serue in the stead of a dunging in those places, as y^e woorthy interpreter M. Cato (that cunningly wote of the auncient husbandrie) witnesseth. These before considered, let vs come vnto the matter: Certaine skilfull practitioners admonish, that a Garden-plot or fielde, be not sowne ouer all, until the earth be soe that be wel moystened with shoures. That if these fall in due season and time (then the skilful Gardeners agree) to be wel liked. If any be otherwise occasioned to sow, as often it so happeneth, then the seedes slowly breake forth, how workmanly soeuer the seedes may be bestowed in a drie Garden-ground, or plough-land, as that woorthie Columella witnesseth: which like matter in certaine countries is wont to be exercised, where y^e conditio of the aire is on such wise. For what the same is which shalbe bestowed in a drie earth, is euen y^e like, as if the same were laide in a house, which corrupteth not. But when flowers fall on the seedes (committed to the earth certaine daies before) they after shote by in one daie: yet are these seedes in daunger (wile in the meane time) of Birdes, and Wites or Bilmites, except the seedes be (before the sowing) preserved and defended with those helpes

helpes which shal after be uttered, in þ proper place following. To w^h soeuer the occasion and wether serue, the Gardener shall employ his diligence, that the Garden-ground o^r field, which ought to be leuelled, and sowe in the spring time (that the same may yeelde the proper fruites in the Sommer time) be digged and dunged (if neede so require to the earth) about the end of haruest, when as yet the colde season and frosts be not approached, no^r bitter weather begun. And the same garden plot o^r quarters of the garden, which the Gardener would in the haruest time, haue couered with the Sallet, pot-herbes and rootes, ought to be turned vp in the beginning of sommer, o^r in the moneth of May, that the cloads of earth may through all the cold Winter, and hote sommer weather (speaking o^r rather here meaning of the greater gardens) be so dissolved, as the worthy Maro Phillicke instructeth.

And to these that the rootes of the vnprofitable hearbes o^r weeds may likewise be killed: after the winter o^r sommer time ended, dung them must be orderly turned in with the earth: as in the moneth of March (the þone decreasing) so^r the spring time, and in the end of haruest, so^r the winter time. And when the sowing time approacheth o^r draweth neare, then shall the garden ground (as the proper order and manner of euery countrie is) be diligently raked, weeded and purged, both of the stones and vnprofitable rootes: after the same, let the earth be dunged, and orderlie digged, as in the manner afo^re taught, which through the diligent digging so often repeated, that the dung with the earth by the twise labouring ouer bee well dissolved and mixed together. After this digging and dunging againe the second time (if the ground needeth such fattening) and the earth leuelled, may the garden (about the middest of februarie, but I rather suppose in the moneth of March to be more agreeable, and the þone especiallie in her first quarter) be beautified in apt places of the same, with semely hearbes, befo^re the quarters and beds be wo^rkemanlike froden out by the Gardiner: the instruction of which hearbes, shall fully be bettered in this next Chapter.

C 3 The

The framing of sundrie hearbes delectable in a Garden, with the walks
and Alleyes artely deuised in the same.
Chap. 12.



The herber in a garde may be framed with Juniper poles, or the
Willow, either to stretch, or be bound together with Rysers,
after a square forme, or in arch maner winded, that y^e branches
of the Vine, Melone, or Cucumbyr, running and spreading all ouer,
might so shadowe & keepe both the heate and sunne from the walkers &
sitters there vnder. The hearbes erected and framed in most gardens,
are to their much refreshing, comfort and delight. These two, as the
vpight, directed by quarters set in the earth, and leaning to the wall,
neare to which faire Rosemarie, or the red Rose, set to run straight
vp, and the winding in arch maner, framed (as I vttered afoze) with
the Juniper, or withie poles, to shadowe the walles there vnder. As
this fastning the Vine, and sundrie hearbs, which in the growing vp,
runne and spread ouer the same, as the Bryonne, Cucumbyr, Courd
& diuers others, of which here vnder we shall moze fully entreat. But
first I meane to speak of those hearbes, which the Gardener planteth
and ordereth to run for beauties sake in an vpight herber: after to
intreate of those, which he either soweth or planteth, to run ouer the
winding or arch herber. The plants to run vp, and serue conieliest for
the straight herber, ought to bee those of a fragrant sauour, and that
grow

growe or shote vp high, and are spread abroad, which especially framed in garden for delight and pleasure, and these properly named wall hearbes, in that they are set in a maner leaning to the wall, with the quarters set vp right, and plots fastned ouerthwart, along the which, the Rosemarie, the Iasmine, and redde Rose in manie gardens, set to growe vp right, which in time growing, beautifie an vp right herber, although these couer not the same, through their shorter and lower growing then the herber: yet this commoditie ensueth by the herber, that the owners friendes sitting in the same, may the freelier see and beholde the beautie of the garden, to their great delight. The erection and garnishing of the winding herber maye best bee wrought with Juniper poles, in that these may well endure without repairing for tenne yeares: but those framed with the Willow poles, require euerie three yeare to bee repaired.

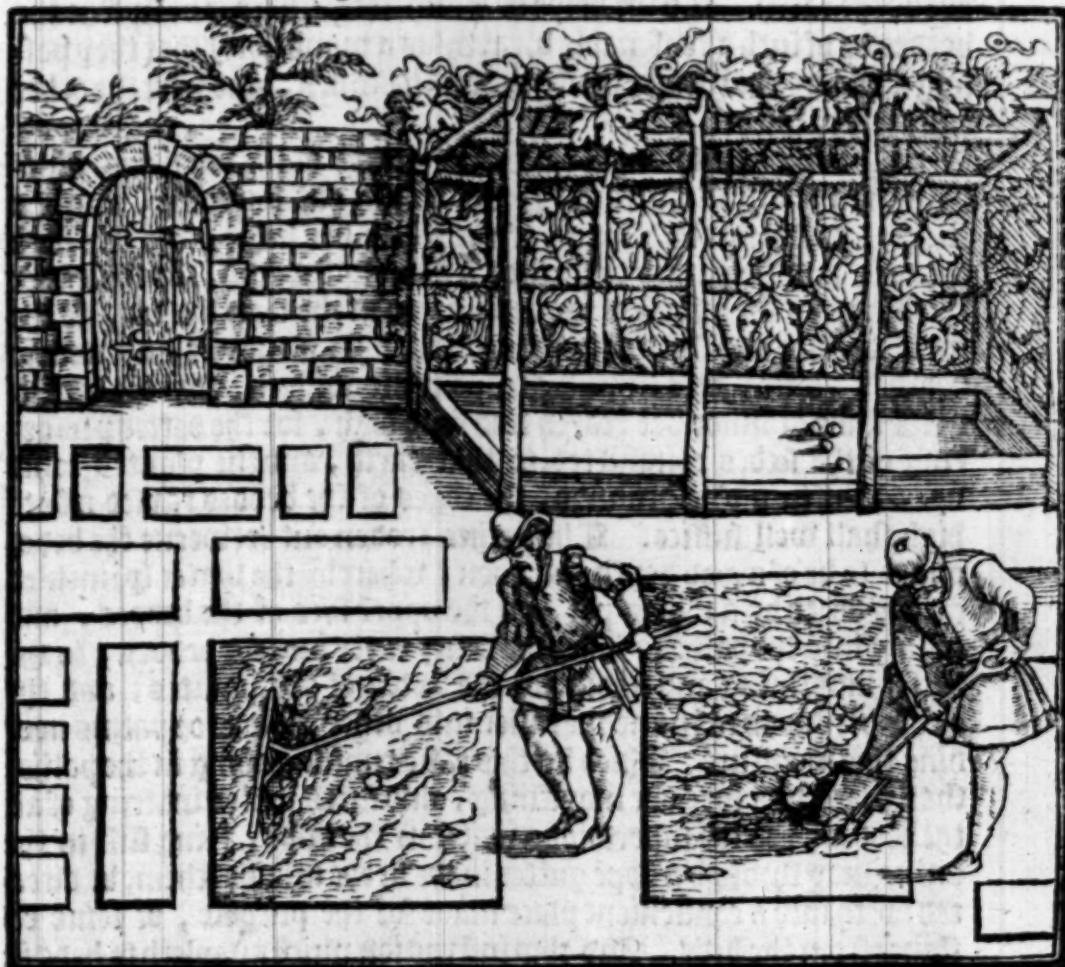
The owner or gardener that would set Rose trees to runne by the poles of the herber, ought workmanlie to begiune and doe the same about the middell of Februarie, and in the first quarter of the Moone, the beds before well reared with a stonie and drye earth, and not with dung. The Rose trees with their rootes, are also to be planted in short and narrow beds diligently rayled with a drye earth, but if the Gardener or owner will, slips may bee broken off from the rootes, cut in a slope maner at the heades, about a mans foot and a halfe long, withed at the endes, and so set in a slope maner, a foote deepe into beds, well reared with a drye earth, and in the increase of the Moone. The olde trees new set euerie fift yeare in the waine of the Moone, take roote the sooner, and yelde the more Roses, being prouided and refreshed euerie yeare with new & drye earth about the rootes, for neither the slips nor olde rootes loy in a fat cleve, nor moist ground, but in the drye and stonie earth, and to bee sette in rankes well a foote distance one from anoter, in drye beddes well reared vp: for bestowed in rankes of such distance betweene, they prosper the better, and yelde more Roses. the seedes of the Rose committed to the earth, doe slowlie come vp, yet so often as you minde to sow the seedes, bestow them a foote deepe in light and drye earth, about the middell of March with vs, and in Februarie, in hotter places, the Moone then increasing.

Here

Here may anie truly learne by the instruction of the worthy Peapo-
litane Palladius Rutilius, which are the seeds of the Rose: for a man
(saith he) may not thinke the yelloiw graines within the Rose flower
(being of a golden colour) to be them, but the knobs which grow af-
ter the maner of a most short and small pear, the seedes of which are
then full ripe, when they be perceiued brownish and soft, which will
be in the moneth of September. The owner also may set the Jas-
mine tree bearing a fragrant flower, the muske Rose, Damaske Rose
and Prinet tree, in beds of drie earth, to shoot vp and spread ouer this
Herber, which in time growing not onely defendeth the heat of the
Sunne, but yeeldeth a delectable smell, much refreshing the sitters
vnder it. But this Arche-herber for anie kinde of Roses, may not
bee built much aboue a mans heigth for the short growth of them.
And as this herber is delectable to the eye, euen so laborious, & with
diligence to bee tended: for which cause the moze number in En-
gland, plant Vines (for the lesser trauaile) to run and spread ouer
the vp-right and square herbes, framed with quarters and polles rea-
ching a breadth. After the hearbes seemely perfozmed, in conueni-
ent places and walkes of the garden ground (here meaning and
speaking of the large plottes) the Alleis euen troden out, and lea-
nelled by a line, as either three or foure foote abroad, may cleanelie
be sifted ouer with riuer or sea sand, to the end that showers of raine
falling, may not offend the walkers (at that instant) in them, by
the earth cleauing or clagging to their feete. The commodities of
these Alleis and walkes, serue to good purposes, the one is, that the
owner may diligentlie view the prosperitie of his hearbes and flow-
ers, the other for the delight and comfort of his wearied mind, which
he may by himselfe, or fellowship of his friends conceiue, in the delec-
table sightes, and fragrant smells of the flowers, by walking vp and
downe, and about the garden in them, which for the pleasant sightes
& refreshing of the dull spirites, with the sharpening of memories, ma-
ny shadowed ouer with hauing or Archhearbes, hanging windowes
properlie made towards the garden, whereby they might the moze
fullie view, and haue delight of the whole beautie of the garden. But
the strait walks, the wealthie made like Galleries, being al open to-
wards the garden, & couered with the vine spreading aboue, or some
other trees which moze pleased them. Thus briefly haue I touched
the

the benefits of walks and Allies in anie Garden-ground: which the Gardener of his owne experience may artly tread out by a line, and sift ouer with sand, if the owner will, for the causes afoze vttered.

The forme of the disposing the quarters into beddes, and apt borders about, with the sowing, choise and defence of the seedes, and weeding of the beddes. Chap. 13.



The quarters well turned in, and satred with good dung a time before, & the earth raised thzough the dunging, shal in handsome maner by a line set downe in the earth, be troden out into beddes and seemely borders, which beds (as Columella witnesseth) rayled newly afoze with dung, and finely raked ouer, with the clods dissolued, and
D
stones

stones purged forth; shall bee artely troden out, into three fote of breadth, and into what length the owner or Gardener will: but to such a breadth especially troden forth, that the weeders handes may well reach vnto the middest of the same, least they thus going by the beddes, and weeding forth the vnp:ofitable hearbes and grasse, may in the meane time treade downe both the seedes shooting vp, & plants about the earth. To the helpe of which, let the pathes betweene the beddes be of such a reasonable breadth (as a mans fote) that they passing along by, may freely weede the one halfe first, and next the other halfe left to weede.

The beddes also ought (after the minde of the woorthie Neapolitane Palladius Rutilius) to bee troden out narrowe, and of a length, as twelue fote long, if the plotte bee large, and sixe fote broad, and the pathes to these of a seemely breadth, for the easier retching into the middle of the beddes, or at the least frailer, to the furtherance and speede of the weeders. In a moyste and watric Garden-plotte, this skillfull Neapolitane willet, that the beddes in the same grounde bee reared two fote high, for the better prospering of the seedes committed to that earth, and the plantes come vp. But in a drie grounde, the edges of the beddes rayled a fote high, shall well suffice. The pathes troden out betweene the beds, ought to be of a good depth and euen, whereby the water sp:inkled gently forth by a water-pot, on the vpper face of the beddes, and falling into the pathes, may the easier enter into the beddes, to the better moystning and feeding of the rootes of the plantes, and the rest superfluous to runne the easier into other Alleys or pathes needing this moysture, which by this easie running along in the paths, shall proceede a speedier moystning, and farre better watring of all the beddes, yea the superfluous water in the ende, lying still in the paths, may through a slope gutter made in the midst of them, be directed forth into a conuenient place made for the purpose, of some distance from the beds. And this instruction much auayleth to beds in the night time, when as mightie showers happen to fall, whiche might overcloy the beds, were it not for the Gutters speedily conueying the water away.

All these instructions conceiued, the Gardener or Owner maye then prepare himselfe to the committing of Seedes to the earth:

earth : in which hee ought to be carefull, that after the bestowing of the seedes in the earth, a clearnesse or mildenesse of the ayre may for certaine daies succeed : for thzough the ayre and weather favouring, and the seedes solone in warme places, where the Sun long shineth, do they most speedely bzeake, and shote aboue the earth, so that the seedes be new and good, the age of which in this doing, much availeth to be examined and knowne. Wherefoze euerie Gardener and owner ought to be carefull and diligently to foresee, that the seedes committed to the earth (as M. Cato willeth) be neither too olde, drie, thinne, withered, noz counterfeyted, but rather full, new, and hauing iuice. These notes of the seedes remembzed, and the Gardener minded to commit them to the earth, ought alsoe to regarde, that the winde at that instant bloweth not from the North, but rather from the South, or Southwest, noz the daie verie cold : for in such seasons and daies (as all the skilfull report) the earth as then timorous and fast shut, hardlie receiueth and nourisheth the seedes committed to it, where the ground in a contrarie maner, doeth willingly apply and retaine the seedes, bestowed or solone in faire daies, and temperate hote.

The Artely disposing of sundrie beddes, for the sowing and increase of diuers frutes and kitchin hearbes, with the wittie defences to bee vied after the seedes are bestowed. Chap 24.

The Gardener minding to commit chosen seedes into sundrie beds, ought to learne, that the beds lying open to the south, be high raised, thzough the well mixing of horse dung with the earth, & after the even raking and leuelling, to remaine a certaine time vnsoled: then one or two of the beds in the moneth of March, and in the increase of the Moone, may he sow with Lettuce & Murselane seedes, for these sooner spring vp in the moneth of March, than February, to be removed in the beddes, after the plantes be shotte vp halfe a finger heighth. In those beddes may he also sow the Parsely, Rocket, Sorrell, Endiue, and diuers other Sallet hearbes: which after they be somewhat come vp, may bee thinner sette in other beddes. Haue beside a speciall regarde to your Seedes, that they bee neither too old, withered, thinne, and emptie, and the borders of those Beddes may you bestowe with the Seedes of the Artichoke, well two hand breadth asunder.

In an other bedde may you sow fine seedes, to haue pleasant hearbes that may bee kept drie, for the pottage of kitchen in the Winter time, and those which yeelde delectable flowers, to beautifie and refresh the house, as the *Maliozam*, *French balme*, *Time*, *Hyssope*, *Basil*, *Sauerie*, *Sage*, *Parigolde*, *Winglas*, *Bozage*, and sundrie others. The Gardener may drie these seedes in beds, lying all open to the warme Sunne, as the *Ozege*, *Lemon*, *Pomecitron*, *Pomegranate*, the *Pytle* and *Date*, but these ought so to bee fenced by a succoure on the North side, that the colde Ayre hinder or let not the comming vp of them. When the *Cytrone* or anye of these bee well sprung vp, the Gardener ought to remoue and set them into proper chestes filled with light earth, which at will and pleasure, may bee rolled hither and thither, for the better auoyding of the Sunnes great heate, and bitter colde ayre, by standing vnder a couer or *Penthouse*, made for the onelie purpose. In an other bedde being of good length, and placed toward the quick-set hedge, and to runne ouer the Arch *Herber*, may the Gardener bestow seedes of the *Cucumber*, *Cytrone*, rounde *Gourd*, and long: In an other bedde also, being long and narrow, and deep furrows at eche side made, to set vessels lower than the beds, may the Gardener sow seedes, of the sundrie kindes of *Peas*. That the Birds and other foules may be defended from comming to the seedes committed to the earth, the skilfull will, that the white-thorne be laide on the beds: but to bestow your seedes in beds rather in the moneth of *March*, than *February*, & the *Moon* increasing, do speedier appear aboue the earth. But if the Gardener feareth least the seedes committed to the earth should be in danger through the bitter cold aire and Sunnes heat following (as yearly the like so happeneth) the beds may then be couered with thick *Mattresses* of straw, in such maner, that they hinder not through their weight, the crescent things comming vp, which may thus bee ordered, in setting first vp sundrie forked stiches at eche corner, and in the sides of the beddes, on which long rodde laide, reaching to eche corner, and at the ends, as *Columella* willeth: these done, let him wittily lay on the *Mattresses*, in couering & defending the yong plants from the cold or heat, at that tyme. But at such times as the ayre being clear in the cold season, the *Mattresses* (when the Sun shineth warme) may be taken off, for the speedier increasing of the *Plantes* springing vp. All hearbes and rootes

for the Kitchen, prosper far better by their removing, and thinner setting, through which (by report of the skilfull) they yeelde a pleasanter sauor. There are of Greeke writers of husbandrie, which will the sowing of seedes to be done in the increase of the Moone, as from the first quarter, untill the full light of the Moone, and the knowing at that time to be vnder the earth in the day time. Others hauing denised a perster waie, do not allow a timely or early sowing of seedes, for which cause they disposed and deuised the same sowing of seedes, into two, yea into three or foure severall times of the day, contenting by this meanes to auoide the vncertaintie of the time to come: herein calling to mind the husbandly proverbe, of the worthy Columella which saith, Haue no mistrust in the committing of seedes to the earth.

It therfore becometh the Gardener, which hath an earnest care for the purchasing of kitchen or pot hearbes, to regard & see that the seedes committed to the earth be full & new, & earth artely prepared, the dung in the same laudable, and water at hand for the vse of the seedes. For the seedes sound and good, do yeeld after the sowing plants of the like goodnesse & vertue: the earth laboured and made apte, will verie well keepe and prosper the seedes committed to it: the dung being good, and well mixed with the earth, will cause the earth batteller, and to these the lousier, whereby water diligently sprinkled on the same, may the freelier and eassier enter in, to feed and cherish the rootes, and the water seruing to the same end, that it may as by a sowing pappe nourishe and bring by all crescent thinges.

The workemanlie casting forth, deuising, & preparing of beds for the most hearbes and rootes of the Kitching. Chap. 15.

The owner or Gardener ought to remember, that before he committeth seedes to the earth, the beds be disposed and troden out, into such a bredth and length, as best answereth to euery plant, & root, in that the beds to be sowne for the Hauet rootes, ought to be troden out large and long, next to which may the beddes for Colworts and Cabbages be ioyned of a sufficient bredth: to these next may you place beddes of a reasonable bredth, for the Itapes and Luren rootes: then for a seemely diuision in the garden, may be tread out by these an Alley of three foote broad: next to which, if the Gardener will,

may he dispose sundrie beddes together, for diuers kindes of hearbes, as the Marrache, Spinege, Rocket, Parsellie, Sozrell, Beetes, Speradge, Cheruill, Boyage, Fenell, Dill, Pynts, white Poppie, and sundrie others. Next ioyning to these, may the owner of Gardener place an other alley of thzee foote broad, by which, frame beds for the Leks and Cynes, and to these next, may the Gardener ioyne beds for the Onyons and Chiboules, by these next, the Scallions and Carlike in two beddes disposed. Then leuel out by these an Alley of thze foote and a halfe broad, to which the Gardener may adioyne manie beddes about for borders, seruing as well for the keeping in of the saours, as for hedges and pot-hearbes for the Winter. After these, it shall bee right profitable to leuell a bedde onely for Sage, another for Flos, the like for Lime, another for Marioram, a bedde for Lauender, another for Rosemarie and Southerenwood, a bedde for Sauerie and Flos, beddes for Coste marie, Basil, Baulme, and running Lime: yea a bedde for Camomile, for the vse of benches to sit on, and a delectable Labyrinth to bee made in the garden (if rōme will so serue) with Flos and Lime, or the Winter Sauerie onely. In the garden besides, to sow and plant diuers Whiske hearbes, and pleasant floures, shall bee to great vse and commoditie, in that these, beside their delectable sight, yelde a commoditie to our bodies, in curing sundrie griefes as well in women, as men, for which cause, it shall be necessarie to sow beds of phisicke hearbs next to these, as the blessed Whiske, the Romane wormwood, the Sperage, hearbe Mercurie, Gentiane, Dittanie, hearbe Fluelline, Parts tongue, Buglosse, Selseheale, Liuerwort, Lungwort, Stecados, Valeriane, Spykenard, Lyons foote, Bugwort, hearbe patience, Angelica, Byttony, and manie others, of which in the second part shall particularly be vttered, and their Whiske benefits to be employed manie waies.

The rare inuentions and defences for most seedes to bee committed to the earth, that these be neither endamaged of Birds nor creeping things. Chap. 6.

ALl worthy writers agree, that in vaine the husbandly Gardener shall trauel, yea and all other, if the seeds bestowed in the earth, happen

happen after to be endamaged either of wormes, and other creeping things, or other wise scraped vp and wasted by birds, or els harmed by any other iniurie, whether the same be wrought within, or without the earth, for which cause, that the owner or Gardener may auoid these iniuries, it is high time that hee employ a care and diligence in the conceyuing of these remedies and secretes following. If seedes to be committed to the earth, are a litle time before the bestowing, steeped in the iuice of houseleke or syngrene, they shall not only be without harme preserved, from Birds, Mites, field-mice, and other spoilers of the garden hearbes, but what plants shoot vp of these, shall after proue the better and worthier, as I obserued the like, found noted both in the Greeke commentaries (of matters of the field) and Latin authours of husbandrie, which to be most true, although experience instructeth and approueth the same, yet this manie times happeneth in sundrie Countries, that small store of the hearbe can bee found to supply the turne, by reason whereof, the Gardener must be forced to exercise a sparer way, after this maner, in steeping of the hearbe for a night in a good quantitie, and the same to sprinkle sufficiently on the seedes, whereby they maye all the night drinke and drinke in the substance of the hearbe, as the worthy Columella instructeth.

And for lacke of this hearbe altogether, (the said Authour reporteth) that the Gardener may vse in steade of it, the soote cleaning on the chimney, which gathered a day before the bestowing of the seedes in the earth, and mixed for a night with them, doth the like defend the seedes in safetie.

The Greeke writers of husbandrie (and after them, Plinie, and the worthy Neapolitan Palladius Rutilius) report, that those seedes may bee preserved in safetie, from all euil and garden monsters, if the bare heade, without flesh, of either Mare or shee Asse (hauing beene couered of the Pale) bee buried in the garden, or that the middest of the same fixed on a stake set into the earth, bee erected.

The worthy Plinie further reporteth, that there is a garlike growing in y^e salowe field (named Allium which on such wise boiled, y^e the same will not grow again, and strawed on the beds sowne, doth in such maner analle, that birdes after will not scrape vp the earth,

nor spoile the seedes bestowed in them. And such which haue eaten of this, are taken (as being astonished) with the hand. The well practised Affricanus vnto the same matter instructeth, that if a quantitie of Wheat or Barley be boiled or infused in wine, and mixed with Asellwort, as either the blacke or white, and the same sprinkled abroad by the pathes of the beds round about, doth on such wise defend the seeds sowne from the iniurie of birds. But those being in a manner dead by eating of this, or at the least starke drunke, he willet then to hang vp by the legges, on a long rodde sticked in the earth, to the terror and fearing away of all other birdes comming to the place. For this wort the Autho^r omitteth the rare practise of the decoction of riuer Cressis: with which if the Gardener shall sprinkle his seedes before the sowing, Byrdes will neuer after (a matter to be maruailed at) approach to the garden beddes: yea the plants beside, which are sprung or shotte out of these, shall endure and continue safe and free from all the iniuries of creeping thinges. There are certaine skilfull practitioners, which affirme to haue auailed mightelie in drining away birds, by the onely sprinkling of this decoction aboue taught of the plants come vp. which matter hath of manie beene experienced aboue a hundred times, so that the same were wrought at a certaine period and time of the Moone. Sundrie practitioners mixed the bruised leaues of the Cypresse tree, with the seedes for a night, and the same mixture on the morrow they bestowed in the earth, being afore well wrought, and turned in with dung. For on such wise the plants sprung out of these were deliuered from all maner of gnawing or creeping thinges. Others skilfully practised, used the dye shauinges or filings, either of the Harts horne, or Elephants tooth, which they mixed with the seedes for a day, and committed them after to the earth, or they otherwise sprinkled the seedes to be sowne with the water of the infusion and mixtion of these for a night.

The wittie helpes commended of the auncient for the Garden seedes, to be employed as well before as after the sowing that these be not harmed by outward nor inwarde iniuries. Cap. 17.

The singular Doet Virgill counselleth that the seeds to be committed the earth to be afore sprinkled & moistened with the water of Nyter

Nytze infused, or the Wyne made of the same.

The Greeke Apulcius willeth, that Seedes (before the sowing) be sprinkled and moistned with Wine, for on such wise handled, the plants springing and shooting vp, weaken the lesse, yea being feeble, they shall mightly be holpen with water & Wyne mixed & sprinkled on them.

There are certaine Greeke instructors of Husbandrie (both of Plinie, Collumela: and the Neapolitane Paladius Rutilius) allowed and commended, whiche will, that the rootes of the wilde Cucumbe be infused for one whole day and a night in faire water, and with the same, through the often sprinkling, so to moisten well the Seedes, the next day those seedes covered ouer with a blancket, they will the next morrowe to bee committed to the earth, affirming the Seedes thereby to prosper the better, and these for a certaintie to be preserved from all euill annoyances. The selfe same doth the skilfull Apulcius will, that a fewe Lentels be also mixed wyth the seedes, in the sowing of them, for as much as the same pulse by proportion, auaileth against the harmes of windes: This authour further willeth, that for a safetie of the seeds bestowed, a speckled Tobe, named of the Greckes Phrynon, be drawne by a line in the night time, rounde about the garden or field, also the earth be laboured, or diligently digged and dressed of the Gardener: and the same after inclosed in an earthen pottle, to be buried in the midst of the Garden or fallow field, which, at the present sowing time approached, shall be digged forth, and throwne or carped from that place, a great distance off, least the plantes (after the seedes sowne) growing vpp in that place, may proue or become bitter and vnpleasaunt of smell.

The Egyptian and Greeke instructors of husbandrie report, that the seedes, after the bestowing, will remaine vngnawne or bitten, & free of harme by creeping thinges in the Garden, if the seedes shall be committed to the earth when the Moone possesseth her halfe light, or is quarter old. It might be thought an obliuiousnes, to haue ouerpassed this phisicke experiment of the singular Democritus, both for the seedes and plants, noted diligently (of the skilfull Neapolitane Palladius Rutilius) after this maner: Bestow & close couer (saith Democritus) of the Sea or riuer Crenises, no fewer than ten in number, into a glasse body

filled

filled vp with water, the same set abroad in the aire, let so stand to be sunned for ten daies together, the seedes that you would after haue to remain in the earth unharmed, sprinkle and moisten with the same water for eight daies together, after these eight daies ended (as Rutilius instructeth) doe in like maner with that water, vntill the plantes after your desired mind be well sprung vp, at which experiment thus handled, you wil greatly maruell: for out of these seedes, what plants shall be sprung and shot vp, will not only drive Beasts and Cattell from the eating of them, but all other creeping thinges of what condition they be, from the gnawing and biting of them, of which matters shall further be intreated, in the proper Chapters a little after, and for other defenses and helpes of seedes as occasion offereth in the places shall be uttered.

The laudable instructions of the aunient, in the nature and election of sundrie Seedes, with the apt times commended for the sowing of most Kitchen Hearbes. Chapter. 18.

The singular Columella instructeth, that all seeds bestowed in the Garden, for the vse and benefite of the Kitchen or potte, ought rather be done in the increase of the Moone, as from the first, vnto the first day. Forasmuch as all seedes committed to the Earth, in the decrease or wane of the Moone, either slowly breake and shote vp, or else so weakely increase, that these after serue to small purpose. It manie times also happeneth (as the worthy Varro reporteth) that although the seeds bestowed in the Earth, be done in the increase of the Moone, the seeds besides hauing a iuice, waightie, full, white meals in them, & in no maner corrupted or too old, yet these notwithstanding are hindered through some euil constellation, which of skillful is named an influence of Beauen, were the Gardeners diligence neuer so much, so that it is not impertinent to the matter here to recite what the worthy Neapolitane Palladius Rutilius reporteth of the garden-ground, which saith, that a garden-plot, placed and lying vnder a freshe and swete ayre, and moistned gently by some Spring or swete water running by, is in a manner battell and readie inough, wherby the same requirith but a small instruction & diligence, to be bestowed in the sowing of it. The bestowing of seedes in a moist earth, the beddes afoze shott east, ought to be done in the warme season of the Spring, as in May,

and

and the moone-increasing, for seedes on such wise handled, prosper the better, though the warme and drie time following. But if occasion moueth you to commit seedes into a drie ground, and that water bee farre distant, then digge the Alleys of the beddes deepe, and in a slope maner, for the better leading of the water from beddes sufficientlie moistned, to others lacking moisture: and to these such a drie Earth better agreeth to be sown in the Haruest time, the ground before well moistned with shoures, herein not forgetting the hoise of seedes, nearest agreeing to the natures of these two Earths, with the furtherance of the moone at time of the sowing. If the Gardener mindeth to commit seedes to the Earth in the Sommer time, let the same be done in the increase of the moone, in the monethes of July and August. In the haruest time about the middle of September, and in October, the moone in those moneths in her first quarter: for the time againe of committing seedes to the Earth, let the same be done in the moneths of Februarie and March, the Moone at those times increasing of light.

The Seedes which ought especially to bee sown in the Earth, about the ende of haruest as about the middle of September, and in October the moone at those times increasing, that these may all the Winter endure, and be strengthened in the ground, are the Endive, Onions, Carlike, Scallions, the great Carlike, poong Lettice-heads, Colewortes, Mustard seede, and such like.

The Garden-ground naturally colde, or all the day receiveth but a weake comfort of the Sunne, though his short presence or tarying there, or else in cold Countries, as at Yorke, and farther North. In such places I say, the bestowing of many seedes better agree to be done about the middle of the Spring, or in the moneth of May, in warme and calme daies, the moone then increasing of light.

But the seedes to be committed to the earth in those countries and places in the haruest time, ought rather to be done sooner or before the time with vs, where the seedes otherwise to be bestowed in hote countries and places in the Spring time, require farre timelier to be done, as in the beginning of the moneth of March, and the seedes to be sown in those places in the haruest time, to be bestowed much later.

The seedes that at will of the Gardener may be committed to the Earth,

Earth, either in Barrell or Spring-time, chiefly for the Kitchen or pot, under a gentle ayre, and in a Battell ground, are these, the Coleworts, Panew, Artichocke, Endiue, Lettuce, Dill, Rocket, Coliander, Parsellie, Fennell, Radishe, Parsnip, Carret, and sundrie others. Yet these by report of the skilfull, come better forwarde, being sown in the moneth of July, the countrie there hote, but in the countrie temperate, the seedes ought rather, in the moneth of August: and in the countrie beeing colde, in the moneth of September. Those seedes committed to the earth in warme and calme daies, prosper farre better than those being sown in hote and nipping cold daies: so that the warme, comfortablie daye by the plants, whereas the hote daies (in a contrarie maner) doe dys, and the bitter colde shut the earth.

The seedes which the Gardener mindeth to bestowe in the earth, ought not to be about a yere old, and that byused haue a white meale within, & full: for other wise being ouer old, or withered, they wil neither grow, nor profit at all. The fresher and newer that the seeds be, at time of the bestowing in the earth, as the Leke, the Courcumber, and the Gourde, so much the sooner these byake, and appeare about the earth: contrariwise, how much the older the seedes shall be, as the Parsely, Betes, Dyan, Cresses, Penderoyall, and Coliander, so much the speedier doe these shote vp, and appeare about the earth, so that the seedes before the sowing be not corrupt.

Certaine preceptes of the skilfull in our time, for the sowing of
of manie delectable floures, and tender Hearbes, with
the obseruations of the Moone in these, and
in other matters necessarie.

Chap. 19.

The latter writers of husbandrie reporte, that these tender Hearbes, and pleasaunte floures, as the Patozam, Sauerie, hearbe Fluelline, Buglosse, the blessed Thistle, the hearbe Angelica, Valeriane, Balme, Annis, Dill, Fennell, Dyan, Mintes, Rue or hearbe Grace, Sperage, Arache, Spinache, Betes, Endiue, Borage, Rocket, Taragone, Parsely, Sozrell, Endiue, Strawberrye, Lettuce, Artichocke, and sundrie others, the Parrigolde of all kinds, Rofecampion the redde and white, the flower Armour, the
Floure

Floure Petilins, the Columbine white and blew, Sweete Johns, the Pincke, Heartes ease, the Pionie, red Lillie, hearbe Sticas or Ranander gentle, Watchers button, the Gilliflowre of all kindes, the Carnation, and manie others, ought rather to bee committed to the earth in the spring time and sown in the monethes of March and April, for so they speedier come forthward, then bestowed in the moneth of Februarie, herein considering the state & diuersitie of the time. The seedes also of the tender hearbes committed to the earth in an apt time, and the Moone in her first quarter, do the speedier shoote vp, being specially sowne after showers of raine, on sunnie and warme places, (as lying open all the day to the Sunne) which on such wise do the soonest and speediest breake, yea and appeare aboue the earth. For which cause, a diligent care must be had in the bestowing of tender seedes, that the winde then bloweth not from the North, nor done in colde and close dayes: for these both include the seedes in the earth, and hinder their growing and shooting vp.

Seedes bestowed in hote places, doe sooner yeld their stemmes and leaues, yea these speediest giue their seedes. Such time vse in the sowing of your seedes, as may be both milde & warme, in that warme dayes following speede more forthward the seedes bestowed.

As touching the most seedes committed to the earth, they ought rather (as afoze vttered) to be new, not reueled but full, bigge weightie, faire of colour, fattle or hauing a iuice, which broken giue a white meale and not dye powder, for the seedes that after the breaking peeble a dye powder, do well declare them to be corrupt, and seruing to no purpose.

The seedes thus tried afoze, and bestowed at that time in the earth, when showers fell a day or two befoze, and a temperate day at the sowing of the seedes do verie well prosper the growing, & procure these to shoote vp far speedier. In that a cold ayre at the sowing, and a day or two after, is knowne to bee harmefull to seedes, through the including of them in the earth, and hindring in their growth and shooting vp.

If necessitie forceth the Gardener to bestow any seedes or plants in a salt earth, let these be either set or sown about the end of haruest, whereby the malice and euil qualitie of the ground may bee purged, through the showres falling all the winter.

If the owner or Gardener mindeth to bestow young trees in this ground, let sweete earth or river sande, bee turned in with the same.

The Greeke writers of husbandrie (after whom Columella and Rutilius) will, that all the kindes of pulses, as peason, hastings, betches, tares, & such like, to be sowne in a drie earth, saving the beanes, which rather toy to be bestowed in a moist ground.

What seeds the Gardener mindeth to comit, in a well dressed earth let these be bestowed from the first day until the full light of the Moone (well nigh) so; that seeds sowne in the wane of the Moone, come up thin, & the plants insue weake of growth. Such trees as the husbandman, mindeth to build withall, let those rather be cut downe after the consent of the skilfull in the last quarter of the Moone, the shining (at that time) of small light, yea neare to her change, and vnder the Earth.

In the cutting downe and gathering of coyne (as Macrobius wil- leth) so; the longer preserving of it and the straw dye (so that the same be done in a drie season) doth better agree, being in the wane of the Moone.

Such crescent things as the Gardener (or Husbandman) mindeth other wise to sell, ought to be cut, and gathered in the full Moone, whereby the greatnesse thereof such things may yeelde a better sale, and be delectabler to the eye.

Such things as the husbandman mindeth to preserve a long time moist, as Apples, Peares, Wardens, & such like, let them (after the mind of the skilfull) be rather gathered neare the full light of the Moone.

For the committing of seedes to the earth; although the ancient husbandmen prescribe proper monthes and dayes, yet may euerie person herein keepe the precept, according to the nature of place and ayre, so that these diligently be considered, how certaine seedes there are, which speedier spring up, and certaine which slower spring up aboue the earth.

The

The commended times to be obserued, with the annoyance and incōmodi-
 tie to be eschewed, in the bestowing of seedes and plants in the
 Earth. Chap. 20.

The singular D. Niger learnedly uttereth, that the more of esti-
 mation the seedes and plants are, with the trauailes there about
 bestowed, so much the circumspecter ought euerie Gardener and
 husbandman to be, and the more instructions and helps the Gardener
 may attaine, and the greater danger he may therein auoid, the more
 carefull ought he and all others to be.

The dayly experience is to the Gardener, as a scholemaster, to in-
 struct him, how much it auaileth and hindreth, that seedes to bee
 sowne, plants to be set, yea Sions to be grafted (in this, or that time)
 hauing herein regarde, not to the time especially of the yeare, as the
 Sunne altereth the same, but also to the Moones increase & wane,
 yea to the signe she occupieth, and places both aboue and vnder the
 earth.

To the aspects also of the other planets, whose beames and influ-
 ence both quicken, comfort, preserue, and maintaine, or els nippe, wi-
 ther, drie, consume and destroy by sundrie meanes, the tender seedes,
 plants, yea and graftes, and these after their proprietie, and vertue
 naturall or accidentall.

Herein not to be forgotten, the apt choise and circumspection of the
 earth, with other matters generallie required in the same, for which
 cause (after the minde of the skilfull Astronomers) and prudent expe-
 rimenters, in either committing seedes to the earth and planting, or
 other like practises to be vsed about the seedes, plants and young trees,
 these rules following are to bee vnderstanded and kept (which they
 haue left to vs for our commoditie) in cases of importance, and where
 the occasion may be imploied.

When the Moone and Saturne, are either threescore degrees of
 the Zodiacke asunder (which distance in heauen) is named of the
 skilfull, a Sterile aspect, it is then commended to labour the earth,
 sow, and plant, marked after this maner.

But when these are 126. degrees asunder, which properlie is na-
 med a Trigon, or trine aspect thus noted Δ for the more part, then is
 that time better commended for labouring the earth, whether it be for
 tilling, gardening, sowing, planting and setting, or cutting of vines.

When

When the Moone and Saturne, are well a quarter of the Zodiack distant, which is 90. degrees (named of the skilfull & quadrate aspect) thus commonly marked, ☐ then is denyed vtterlie to deale in such matters.

The Moone being six signes distant from Saturne, so that she occupieth the like degree in Taurus, as Saturne in Scorpio, or the Moone otherwise in like degrees of Gemini to Saturne, (right against) in Sagitarie, this aspect together is disallowed of the expert Astronomers, and noted after this maner. ☿

The Moone possessing her full light at those times, is like denied of the skilfull: yea the Moone being neare to that section, named of most Astronomers the Dragons taile, is in like maner disallowed for sowing of fine seedes, and setting of daintie plants. Here uttering precepts generall, as we now do.

But the Moone approached nere to that sectiō, named the Dragons head: the same time for doing the like is verie well commended: all thinges before supposed agreeable. But to be briefe, and to knit vp other obseruations, answering to the Moones place especially, learne these ensuing.

The Moone increasing, and running betweene the 28. degree of Taurus, and the 19. degree of the signe Gemini, sow fine seedes, & plant daintie hearbes, your earth also prepared, and ayre answerable.

But the Moone found betweene the 28. degree of Gemini, and the first of Cancer, (although she increase) yet bestow no daintie seedes in your earth prepared for the purpose.

From the first degree of Cancer, vnto the six. degree of the same signe (so that the Moone increase) both labour the earth, sow fine seedes, and plant daintie hearbs, herein regarding the condition of the ayre.

From the 28. degree of the signe Leo, vnto the xi. degree of Virgo, your seedes and plants of valour, sow and set, the warme ayre and Moone ayding thereto.

From the xi. degree of Virgo, vnto the xxiij. degree of the same signe, commit seedes to the earth, and set vp your daintie plants, so that the winde then bloweth not from the North, nor the aire colde.

From the xxiij. degree of Virgo, vnto the seventh degree of the signe Libra, labour the garden ground, and sow your fine seedes, so that the Moone increase.

From

From the seventh degree of Libra, unto the six. degree of the same signe (the Moone answering thereto) sowe and plant.

From the sixth of Capricornus, unto the six. degree of the same signe (both the moone and ayre ayding thereto) sowe your fine seedes and daintie plants set.

From the xiiii. degree of Pisces, unto the seventh degree of Aries, the moone increasing of light, and ayre calme, bestow your seeds and plantes in the well dressed earth, prepared for the onely purpose.

These precepts of the prudent experimenters, well bozne alway of everie careful Gardener, the seeds and plants no doubt, shal prosper and increase the better.

Certaine instructions more curious to be learned of everie skilfull Gardener, in the bestowing of seeds and daintie hearbes in a well dressed earth. Chap. 21.



The learned Plinie woozthie of memorie, uttereth a speciall note and rule of the ancient observers, to be learned of everie careful Gardener, in the bestowing of seedes: that if he be occasioned to commit seedes into a moist earth, or the seedes to be bestowed are of a great moisture, then shall the Gardener commodiously choose the ende of the Moones decrease or wane, and neare to her change.

In a contrarie maner, the Garden-grounde of the drierst, or the seedes very drie, then in committing such seedes to the earth, let the moone be increasing, and drawing neare to her full.

To the better furthering of the Gardeners travels, he ought also to consider, that the Garden-earth be apt and good, well turned in with dung, at a due time of the yeare, in the increase of the moone, she occupying an apt place in the Zodiacke, in agreeable aspect of Saturne, and well placed in the scite of heauen. All these thus afore hand learned, and with diligence bestowed, procure the plantes the speedier to grow, and wax the bigger, if afore waightie, full, &c. as before vttered in the nineteene Chapter, so otherwise this care and paines bestowed about the seedes and plants, nothing anayleth the Gardener.

The yeerely Almanackes do maruellously help the Gardeners in the election of times, or sowing, planting, and grafting, but especially in obseruing the moone, about the bestowing of plants, as when the moone increasing, occupieth Taurus and Aquarius. But if it be so the setting of yong Trees, let the same be done in the last quarter of the moone, she then being in Tauro, and in a coniunction with Venus, so these speedier take roote in the earth. And the Gardener planting in either Taurus and Aquarius, or Virgo and Pisces, must as carefully take heede alwaies, that the moone be not euill aspected of Saturne and Mars.

In the planting also of yong Trees, lette the same bee done from the middle of October, vnto the middle of march. In the sowing of seedes, in a well dressed Earthe, lette the moone run at those times in Taurus, Cancer, Virgo, Libra and Capricornus.

But this diligently learne, that the seedes and Plantes increase the better, if any of these signes shall bee ascending in the East angle, and that Mars neither beholdeth the Ascendent, nor the moone by any aspect, but shall be weakly standing in a weak place of the figure at that time.

Here might many other rules, as touching the particular fauour and hinderance of the Starres bee vttered, but that it is not my intent in this Chapter to be tedious in wordes, or darke in sense. For which cause, let these few rules content the Gardener, who

by exercising of them, and through an instructor, may inuent other rules more particular.

Yet I feare me, that the common sort of men will suppose these rules to extende somewhat aboue their capacitie, which for zeale I bears vnto my countrie, moued mee notwithstanding to viter and put such matter into their heads, procuring them thereby (that where the daintinesse and baleyn of the seedes, and plantes so require) to request the counsaile of some skilfull, that both may make plaine these precepts, and instruct them in other rules alike, if neede so requireth.

To conclude, the Gardener must here suppose all matters on his part to be sully and dulle first prepared, and well appointed, and then to attende, or diligently take heed to those times afoze vttered, for the woozking of the Planets and Starres, in the bestowing of seedes and tender plants in the earth.

In what space of time seedes committed to the Earth, in the increale of the Moone, commonly shoote vp and appeare aboue grounde.

Chap. 22.

Florentinus (a Græke wyter of husbandrie) cunninglie vttereth, that the naturalnesse of the grounde, the clemencie of heauen, the fauoure of the weather, and age of the seedes, procureth that the seedes being bestowed in the grounde, doe either speedier, or later shoote vp into plants. For which cause, the daintie seedes committed to the Earth in a faire and warme daie, the place hot or lying open to the Sun, and the seedes newe, doe farre speedier shoote vp, than those that beeing sown in a contrarie season, place, and grounde.

All Seedes sown, doe euermore appeare aboue the Earth, at one certaine time in a manner, for whiche cause, the Gardener ought to haue regard vnto the proper times answering to the bestowing of seedes, and gathering the fruits or yeld of each seedes.

The Spinage, Rocket, Bassil, and the naueto seeds, break and appeare aboue the earth, after the third day following, if a warme ayre succede.

The Lettuce seeds bestowed in a well dressed earth, do break and appeare aboue ground, by the fourth day following, if the clementie of ayre, aide therto: the Cucumber and Cytrone seeds, bestowed in the increase of the Moone, and showers of raine falling the same of the next daie following, procure them to appeare the fift daie after.

The seeds of that sightly hearbe, named the flower of moore, being sown in the increase of the Moone, and the ayre favouring, do break and appeare aboue the earth by the seventh or eight daie following.

The seeds of the hearbe Dyll, bestowed in the earth, in the increase of the Moone, doe (so; the more part) appeare by the fourth day following.

The seeds of the Garden Cresses, and Mustarde, committed to the earth in the increase of the Moone, do commonly appeare aboue the ground, by the fiftie daie after.

The Lecke seeds (bestowed in the ground) in the Sommer time, are seene aboue the earth by the sixt day following, but in the Winter time, in wel dunged beds, by the tenth day after.

The seeds of the hearbe Rocket, committed to the ground in the increase of the Moone, appeare by the eight day following.

The seeds of all the kindes of Coleworts, bestowed in well dressed beddes, are euermore seene by the tenth day following, if the colde ayre hindereth not.

The seeds of the great Leekes, bestowed in well dunged beddes, appeare manie times by the nineteenth, but oftner by the twentieth day following.

The Coliander seeds, bestowed in well trimmed beds, and in the increase of the Moone, are commonly seene aboue the earth by the xxv. day: but the young plants later appeare, if the seeds bestowed are new.

The seeds of the Dyanie and Sauerie, bestowed in light earth, and the Moone increasing, do appeare aboue the ground by the thirtie day following.

The

The Warsely seedes, committed to the earth, and in the increase of the Moone, do commonly bryeake and appeare aboue ground, by the xl. day following, although they are not manie times seene befoze the fiftie day.

Thus haue I briedly vttered, a true and pleasant instruction, both fo: the age of seedes, and skill of the Gardener in the sowing of them. Fo: as I haue aboue saide, the Leeke, the Cucumber, and Cytrone seedes, do speedier come vp, being new seedes: in a contrarie maner, the seedes of the Warsely, Beetes, Spynage, Cresses, Sauerie, Dagny, Denneropall, and Colyander, the elder that these are (befoze the bestowing in the earth) the speedier the seedes bryeake, and appeare aboue ground.

The seedes in like maner of the Cucumber, steeped in milke or like warme water fo: a night, and committed to the earth, vnder a warme aye, do far speedier bryeake, and appeare aboue ground. The like may the Gardener conceiue, to be done with the seedes of the Artichock, and many other hearbes, of which, shall particularlie be vttered, in the proper places hereafter.

The third monthes sowing, or rather in May, to such dwelling far North, and where snow lyeth long, there (this bestowing of seedes) better agreeth, especially, where the qualitis of Sommer is knowne to be moist.

But in other countries (this like) by a seldom happe answereth, seedes thre monthes old, committed to the earth, in the haruest time, will better agree, being done in hote countries, the Moone herein considered.

The Gardener in his well trimmed earth (the time aiding) may commit to the ground all woorthie and excellent kinde of seedes, plants, slips, kernels, and such like: but these fo: a triall bestow in the beds of your garden.

So that in any new kindes of seedes, not assayed or proued befoze, the Gardener may not thzoughly hope, that these will prosper in his ground.

These seedes committed to the earth, in moist places, doe speedier shoot vp (the Moone helping) then bestowed in drie ground: fo: which cause, election vled in sowing of good & full seedes (in either ground) much availeth.

The seeds or sets bestowed in shadowie places although the earth be well laboured before, do rarely or very seldom prosper, and yeelde their floure.

The plants growne to their floure, may at that time (after the minde of the Neapolitane Palladius Rutilius) bee little or nothing handled, for doubt of corrupting their floure, or the sooner sheading of them.

What care and diligence is required of euerie Gardener, in the plucking vp, and cleare weeding away of all vnprofitable Hearbes growing among the garden plants. Chap. 23.

After the seedes being workemanlike bestowed in the beddes, the Gardeners next care must be, that he diligently pull vp, and weede away all hurtfull and profitable hearbes, annoyng the garden plants comming vp.

But about this exercise in weeding of the beds, there is a disagreement among the writers of husbandrie. For certaine deny that the raking doth profit the plants any thing at all, in that by the rake the rootes of the garden plants are so vncouered, and the plants with the same felled, and caused to lye flat on the ground, which, if colde weather insue, are vtterly killed with the nipping ayre; for which cause, they better thought of that weeding and cleansing exercise, by pulling vp with the hand, so that the same were done in due order and time.

Yet it pleased many husbandmen in time past to rake vp the weeds in bed, yet not after one maner, nor at all times alike, but according to the vsage of the Countrie, the good skill and condition of the weather: for which cause, in what maner soeuer this exercise shall be taken in hande, that weeding shall neede or bee required in these places, the Gardener shall not attempt or beginne the weeding of beds with the hand, before the plants well sprung vp, shall seeme to couer their proper beds, and that in this high growth, the plants shal be mixed and ioyned one to the other, according to the nature and forme in their growth.

In this plucking vp, and purging of the garden beds of weedes & stones, the same about the plants ought rather to be exercised with the

the hand, then with an yron instrument, for feare of feebling the yong plants, yet small and tender of growth.

And in the weeding with the hand, the Gardener must diligently take heede that he do not too boysterously lose the earth, nor handle much the plants in plucking away of the weeds, but the same purge so tenderlie, that the rootes of the yong plants be not looscd and feebled in the soft earth: for occasion will moue the carefull Gardener to weede daintie hearbes, being yet young and tender, least grosse weeds in the growing vp with them, may annoy and hinder their increasing. Wherefore the yong plants in some readinesse to be taken in hand, ought not to be stayed until their strong & big growth, but weeded in the meane time, for doubt of the inconueniences aboue vttered. But the common hearbes for the Kitchin the Gardener shal not begin to weede before they be growne strong in roote, and big shot vp. And this learne, that if the earth be loose and soft at the time of weeding the daintie plants, you may not then lose & pull vp weeds, but in a soft and tender maner: and yet fine hearbes require all times to be weeded, so that Showers of raine haue well softned the earth a day before.

The walking or treading often about the beds of the litle and tender plants shooting vp, looseth much the soft earth about them, yea this so setteth down the ground by the helpe of Showres of raine falling, that the weeds growing vp in those beds, are caused the harder to be plucked vp. And sometimes the rootes of the weeds in the plucking vp with the hand are left behinde, through this fault caused of the earth.

Here remember, that you neuer take in hand or begin the weeding of your beds, before the earth be made soft, through the soze of raine falling a day or two before.

Here conceiue, that the clipping, plucking away, and pressing downe of sundrie hearbes with Tyles or other weightie things, after they be growne to some greatnesse, is to great purpose, for so much as this causeth them to keepe the longer greene, and to yeld the thicker, bigger, and fairer Tuffes, besides the letting of the hearbes, that they growe not vp into seede, and to giue these a pleasanter sauer, then the same that afoze they possessed in their growth simple.

As

As by a like meanes and ordering, both the Lettuce, Cabbedge and Colewozte, may bee caused better, and moze pleasant of taste, then the leaues simply growing, without any such maner of ordering:

In the like condition, so the Rabbitt and Pauew roots grow the fairer, and bigger, if diuerse of the greene leaues (after some growth) be handsomely clipped or broken off.

But of the apt ordering of these two last, in causing their rootes to be far bigger then customable, & pleasanter in taste, shall moze fully be vttered in their proper Chapters hereafter, in the second part of this treatise.

The commended times for watering of the Garden Beddes, and what maner of water ought necessarily be vsed to plants, with the latter inuentions of sundrie vessels, aptest for this purpose.

Chap. 24.

The beds being furnished with seedes in due age of the Moone, requireth diligence (if the ayze sufficiently moisteneth not) in the watering of them, least the ground being drie byie of the proper nature, may through the dryeth so; the lacke of raine, cause both the seedes and tender plants shot by, to perish and dye.

For which cause, euerie Gardener ought carefully to consider the condition and propertie of the earth of his Garden, whether of it selfe the same be drie moist, or ouer drie, which two extreames learned, he may with moze diligence, bestow paines about the watering of the garden beddes, so often as neede shall require.

And so; that the seasons in a manner, sufficiently instruct euerie owner and Gardener, when to water the plants come by, it shall not be (of my part) a new instruction, to vtter vnto them, the dayes and times necessarie to water the plants, seeing the youngest of any discretion, know that the beddes chiefly require watering after a drought, or when many hote dayes haue chaunced together, as the like especially commeth to passe in the sommer time, about the Cosmicke rising of the Canicular or dog Star (which with vs commonly happeneth about the seuententh day of Iuly. And this watering of the beddes ought rather be done (as Plini witnesseth) in the morning, some after
the

the Sunne rising) and at the evening when the Sunne possesseth a weake force about the earth. The reason this Authoure alledgeth of the same, is that by watering at the hote time of the day as at none, the water then made hote by heate of the Sunne, would so burne the young and tender rootes of the plantes. And in this watering of the beddes, the Gardener must haue a speciall care and regarde, that hee moisten not the plants too much, lest cloying them too much with water, they after wax feeble and perish. The water best commended for watering of the plants, is the same drawen or gotten out of the Riuer, or other narrow streame ebbing and flowing, or els swiftly running one way, through the helpe of Springes falling into it. But if the Gardener be forced to vse Well water, drawen especially out of a deepe Well, or the water out of some deepe pit, he ought then to let the same stand vp stand for two or three daies together, or at the least for certain houres in the open aire, to be warmed of the Sunne, least the same being newe drawen vp, and so watered or sprinkled forth on the beds both rawe and colde, may feeble and kill the tender young plants comming vp.

The age also of the plantes, shall greatly direct the Gardener to know how much and how smally hee ought to moisten them at each time needfull, for the tender young plants newe come vp, require a lesser watering, and the same gently, where the hearbes more growen, wel so to be plentifully moistned with the water temperate warme. And this water ought gently to be sprinkled forth on the beds, with a watering pottle, and by other meanes, which after shalbe demonstrated, that the rootes of the young hearbs may alike drinke in of the water, and not to be cloyed, through the ouer fast, or too much moisture sprinkled on them, by which doing, these the rather retaine the spirit vanquishing, procured to passe through the exhalation of the earth. For which cause, the beddes at one instant shal not fully be watered, but as the earth and plantes drinke in, so gently sprinkle forth the water, in feeding the plants with this moisture, as by a best or nourishing papper, which like handled, shall greatly prosper the tender plants comming vp, where they otherwise, by the hastie drowning with water, are much annoyed, and put in hazard of perishing.

To the water standing in the Sunne, if the owner or Gardener mixe a reasonable quantitie of dung, after his discretion, this mixture

no doubt will bee to great purpose, for as much as the same gently watered or sprinkled abroad, procureth a proper nourishment to the tender plants and young hearbes comming vp.

The colde as well as the salt water, is knowen to be enemie vnto all kindes of plants, yet Theophrastus reporteth, that the salt water is moze proper for the watering of certaine plants, than any other.

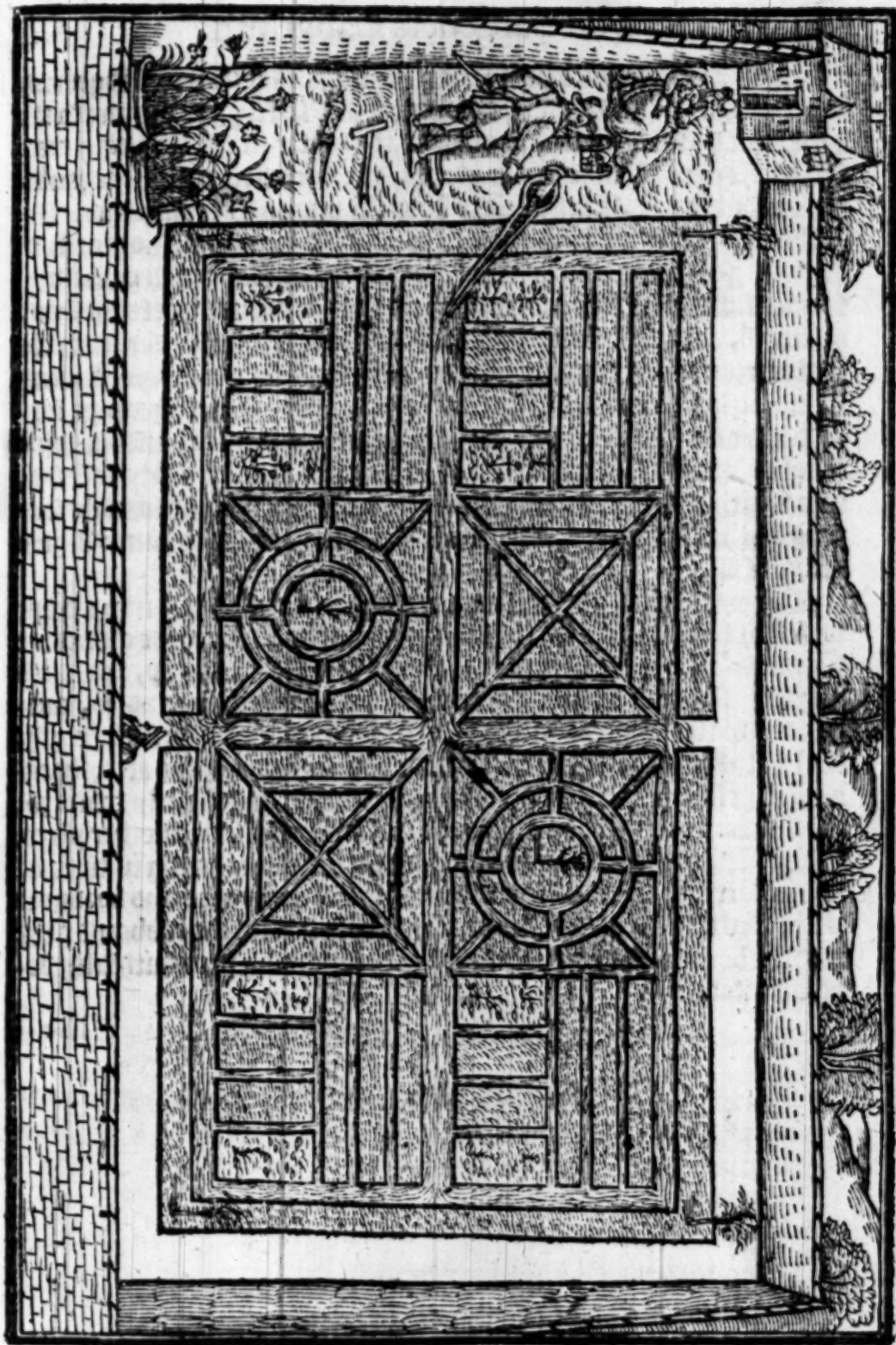
The common watering pot for the Garden-beddes with vs, hath a narrow neck, bigge belly, somewhat large bottome, and full of little holes, with a proper hole formed on the head, to take in the water, which filled full, and the thombe laide on the hole to keepe in the aire, may on such wise be carried in handsome maner to those places by a better helpe ayding, in the turning and bearing vp:right of the bottom of this pot, which needfully require watering.

The watering pot best to be liked, and handsomest for this turne, both for the finely sprinkling forth, and easie carriage of water in the same from place to place in the Garden, is that much vsed in the chiefest Gardens about London, and in diuers partes of Englande now knowne, whose forme is after this manner, the bodie wholly of Copper, hauing a bigge bellie and narrow necke, a strong handle of the same mettall workemanly fastned to the bellie and head, to carrie the potte if neede bee to places in the Garden: but for a moze easinesse and quicknesse in carriage of the potte vp:right and full, is an other strong ring or handle, fastned Artly to the lips of the pot, much like to the Barbers waterpot carried abroad, that serueth to none other turne, sauing for the easie carriage of the potte full of water to needfull places: but this other handle especially serueth to sprinkle forth the water by the long pipe full of little holes on the head, that some name a Pumpe, which reacheth from the bottom, vnto the head of the pot, for the handsomer deliuering forth of the water, the handle in the meane time guiding this long pipe of the pot, vntill all the water be spent.

The Gardener possessing a Pumpe in his ground, or fast by, may with long and narrow troughes well direct the water vnto all beddes of the Garden, by the pathes betwene, in watering sufficiently the rootes of all such hearbes, which require much moisture. But for a plainer vnderstanding of this, I haue heere in the Page following demonstrated the forme to the eye.

There

The maner of watering with a Pumpe by troughes in a Garden.



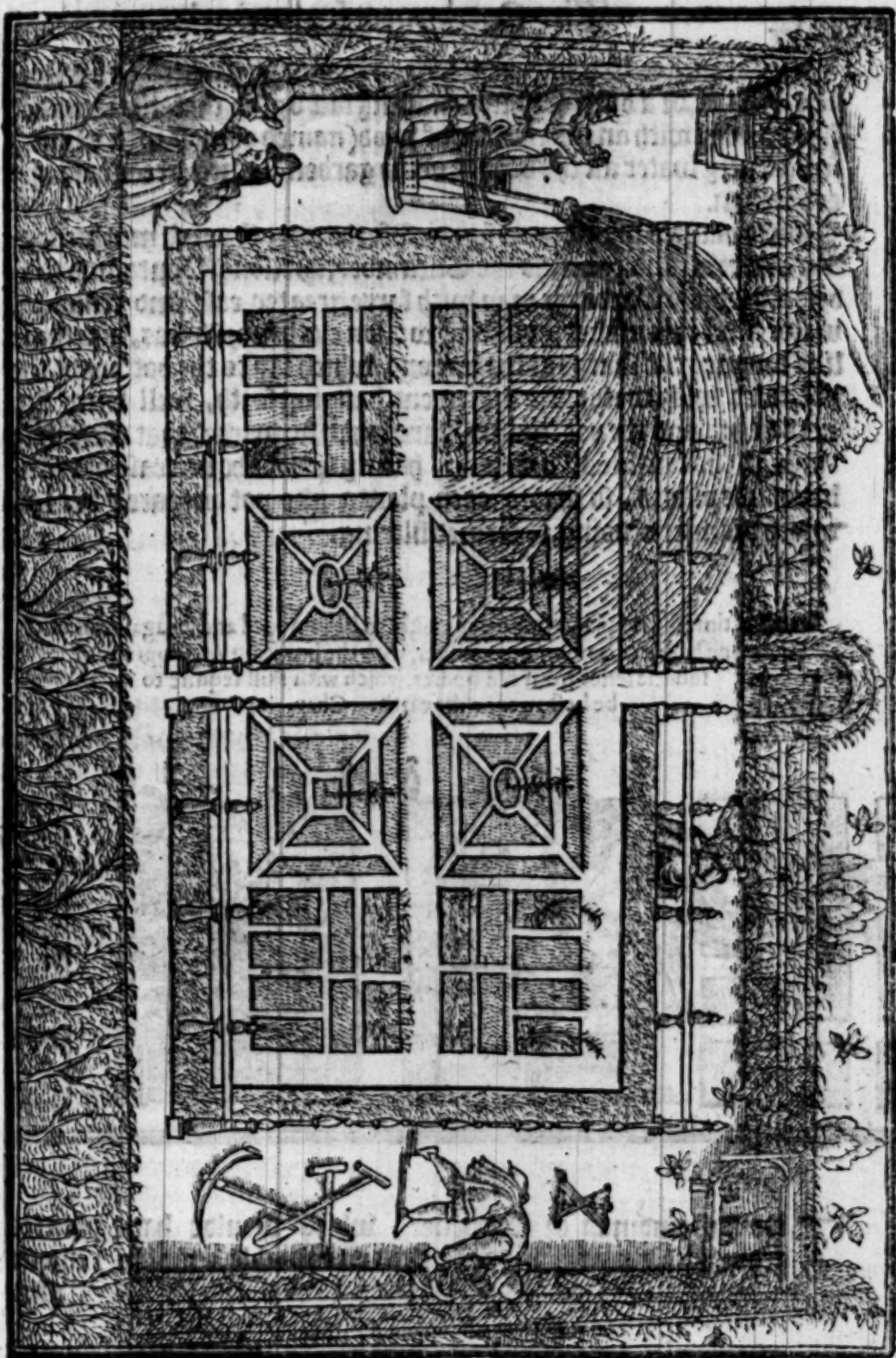
There be some which vse to water their beds with great Squirts, made of Tin, in drawing vp the water, and setting the Squirr to the best, that by force squirted vpwarde, the water in the breaking may fall as dropes of raine on the plants, which sundrie times like squirted on the beds, doth sufficiently feede the plants with moisture,

An other way better commended, and the same with moze ease, in watering of plants and hearbes, is done by a great vessell of Tinne, formed somewhat like to a Squirr, yet in the devided parts the same differeth, for that this hath a pipe of the same mettall raised from the bottome, and reaching in a manner so high, as the great pipe, hauing many little holes at the imbossed toppe or ende, this bigger pipe formed after the maner of a small Pumpe, at whose nether ende, a thicke square plate of Tin striken full of little holes, woekemanly fastned, into which a Pumpe staffe put, for the drawing vp, and forcible sending forth of the water, by thrusting downe with both hands a good distance off.

The vessell thus prepared in a readinesse, must be set into a deepe vessell or tubbe of water, in what place of the Garden the owner or Gardener mindeth to begin in drawing first the Pump vp, and with mightier strength thrusting it downe againe, which so handled, causeth the water to ascend and flie forth of the pipe holes on such heighth, that in the falling, the dropes come downe through the aire, breaking it in forme of raine, that one place being sufficiently watered, the Gardener may then remoue the tub and vessell into another place, which needeth the like watering, and on such wise doing in three or foure places, he shall sufficiently moisten all the beddes and borders of the Garden. That the forme of this vessell with the tubbe may the readier be conceiued, behold this figure following here faithfully demonstrated.

The

The maner of watering with a Pumpe in a Tubbe.



The owner of Gardener, enioying a Pond with water, in his garden-ground, or a ditch of water running fast by, so that the same bee sweete, may with an instrument of wood (named of most men a skiffe) sufficiently water all the beddes of the garden, with great ease and expedition.

Such plantes which come speediest forwarde, through much moisture bestowed on them, as the Cucumber, Pellone, Gourde, and sundrie others, the Gardener may with farre greater ease and trauaile, water after this manner, in taking woollen clothes or Liffes, and the like tongues cut sharpe at the one end, which lay to the bottom of the pot, filled with water, the sharpe end hanging forth, well foure fingers deepe, and the pot leaning somewhat forwarde, that these may through the continuall dropping, hastily speede the increase of the abovesaide plants, so that to each plant a like pot prepared bee set, which manner of doing, is termed filtring.

At what time diuers plants sprung vp, ought to be remoued and set againe, as out of one bedde or border, into another, with the breaking or slipping of sundrie settes from old bodies, which with skill require to be bestowed in the earth. Chap. 25.



The husbandman or Gardener, which woulde haue plantes growe vnto a greater bignesse then customable, ought to remoue
after

after foure or fve leaues be well come vpp, and fet them againe, as out of one bedde bestowed into another, and like from one border into an other. Although the owner may (at all seasons) dispose plantes, at his will and pleasure, yet is it better commended, that all plantes bee chaunged into other earth prepared when showers of raine haue well moistened and softened the same.

The plantes also remoued, and set againe into a fat earth well laboured and dressed, needeth besides, as Columella witnesseth, no other amendement by dung.

The skillfull Neapolitane (Palladius Rutilius) in his worthe worke of husbandrie reporteth, that when the Gardener hath bestowed sundrie kindes of seedes in one bedde together, which after the diligent watering bee so risen, that foure or fve leaues of diuers plantes are sprung aboue the earth, such then after this Authors consent, may wel be remoued and set againe (into beds workmanly prepared) a certaine distance asunder, bring such plants that (befoze the setting) require to haue the toppes of the leaues, and ends of the rootes cut off, whereby they may the freelier growe by boade in toulfe or bigge in roote.

Those kindes of seedes, which after their committing to the earth, and diligent watering, need not, after certaine leaues sprung vp, to bee remoued, may the owner or the Gardener bestowe (as Rutilius witnesseth) in the beddes the thinner, the spoone herein remembered.

The worthe Columella (in instructions of the garden) willeth the owner or Gardener, hauing occasion to pull vp plantes, and sette them againe in beddes, and that the ground the same time (for the lacke of raine, bee ouer drye and harde) to moyssen and soften well the Earth a daye befoze, with water sprinkled forth, by a watering potte, seruing onelye to that vse.

And certaine of these, which require to bee sette a good distance a sunder, the worthe Rutilius willeth to clippe off the toppes of the young leaues, and the endes of the rootes to cut away, befoze the bestowing againe in beddes workmanly prepared, as like the Coleworste, Cabedge, Lettuce, great Letke, Pauewe, and Rape.

Again

Again, a good distance a sinder, are y^e Cucumber, Courd, Melone, Artichocke, Nigella Romana and sundrie other, which thus placed in beds artely prepared, may the readier and handsomer be weeded, and cherished by the earth digged about, so often as need shal require, whereby the plants, through helpe of diligent watering, and furtherrance of the Moone in setting, are after procured to increase the better, and delectabler to the eye.

The young sets for the garden (of pleasant delight and smell) may the owner or Gardener also bestow in Borders at all seasons (although better commended to be done in the spring time) in breaking of the slips or branches of one yeares growth, from the bodie of old stocks, and in wozithing the ends about, so to set them a good depth into the earth, the Moone at that time drawing neare to her change, and knowne to be vnder the earth, which much furthereth the sets in the sooner taking of roote.

But the skillfull Columella rather willethe to cleane the end of the branch or slippe beneath, into which cleft an Ote graine to be thrust or put, and in the setting deepe into the ground, to bestow Ote graines round about the same, (the Moone then neare to her change) rather then any dung.

And those young hearbs, which the Gardener mindeth to remoue, neede not (saith this Columella) to be striked about the rootes with any dung, but rather that the ends of their rootes (before the setting againe) be cut off, as I aboue vttered.

The Marigold, Daylie, Collumbine, Primrose, Consippe, Sweete John, Gillyfloures, Carnations, Pinckes, and sundry other delectable floures, are procured to increase the bigger, sayzer, and doubler, if the owner or Gardener doe often change these into beddes workmanlie prepared, the Moone at those times considered, to bee increasing of light, and that a diligence bestowed in the often watering.

As touching the pulling vp of sundrie daintie hearbes of pleasant saour, and that these to be set againe in beds (orberlie prepared) after the course of the Moone, with a care and diligence to be bestowed particularly on most plants of the garden, shall at large be vttered in the second part of this treatise, where we purpose to intreat of manie laudable and weightie matters besides.

The

The plantes (which after certaine leanes spring by) neede not to be remoued into other beds, are the Spinage, Arache, Will, Sperage, Sozrell, Cheruile, Parsely, and diuers other of like sort.

The laudable instructions of the wise, in the gathering and preserving of the greater number of kitchen hearbes and rootes, with the times aptest, for the like doing by all floures, daintie hearbs, and rootes, to the vse of Physicks,

Chapter. 16.

The best and worthiest rootes of hearbes, are for the moze part, to be gathered in apt places when the leaues are beginning to fall off, and the fruits or seedes alreadie shewd, so that the season be sayze: for done in a raynie time, the rootes be caused the weaker, and filled with rude moisture.

The floures in like maner are to be gathered, as the Borage, Buglosse, and all others of like sort, when they be wholly opened, and be soze they seale, except the floures of the Rose, and Iacemine, which ought to be gathered for the better and longer keeping, befoze they be much or rather but little opened.

The leaues and whole hearbes are to be gathered, when these bee come to their full growth and perfection.

The fruites, as the Melone, Cucumber, Cytrone, and Courde, when these appeare yelowie, and be come to their perfite growth and perfection.

The seedes in like condition are to be gathered, when they be well ripened, and befoze the seedes shewd on the earth, but those which remaine after the hearbes through dried, ought to be rubbed forth with the hands, and kept, vnto the time of sowing.

Here remembryng that the seedes ought to bee gathered in a cleare season, and in the wane of the Moone.

And this for a generall rule obserue, that all those to bee gathered, as the hearbes, floures, rootes, fruites, and seedes, are to be done in a faire and drie season, and in the decrease of the Moone.

The hearbes which the owner mindeth to preserue, are afoze to be cleane picked and clenised, and dried in the shadowe, beeing a place

open

open

open towarde the South, not moiste and free from smoake and dust.

These after are to be put in leather Bags, rather than into Canuase, the mouthes at the hanging by fast tied, and into wooden boxes of the Bore tree, to the ende the hearbes may not loose their proper vertue, as we see those persons to do, which preserve daintie hearbes for the winter time. So that the Boticaries in my opinion are verie negligent, which hang by the Whiske hearbs in their open shoppes and warehouses, through which, the vertue of these not only breathe away, but the herbes charged and clagged with dust, Copwebs, dung of flies, and much other filth.

The floures ought not to be dried in the Sunne, nor in that shadowe caused by the Sunne at Noone, nor in no Chamber or highe place above, forasmuch as these, through their softnesse & tendernesse doe lightly of like occasion, breathe away their proper vertue, but especially through the sharpe heats of the Sunne, and heate of the ayre, vnlesse it be our Rose of the Garden, which to be preserved for a long time, requireth to be dried in a high place standing open to the Sun at Noone, or that the Sunne beames enter vnto, and yet touche not the Rose leaves.

The better waye for drying Floures, is to laye them in a temperate and darke place, free from moysture, smoke and dust, and to stirre them to and fro, that these in the drying corrupt not, and to bee either close kepte in bagges, or continually couered ouer well, that these in the meane time lose not their colour, nor naturall sauour.

After being well dried, these ought to be close stopped in a glazed earthen vessell.

The finer seedes are to be preserved in leather bagges, or in earthen vessels, hauing verie narrow mouthes, or els in Glasse bottels, or gallie glasses verie well stopped.

But the seedes of the Onions, Chibolles, and Leekes, as also of the Poppie, are to be preserved in their huskes and heads.

For the preserving of rootes, the owner ought to learne and exercise two meanes, the one for keeping them fresh, & the other for the round rootes, as the Rane, Radish, Carrot, and others of like sort, and so to preserve them drie.

The

The way and meanes to keepe or preserve rootes freshe, is to burie them in a Seller, in either Grauell or Sande, well turned vpon them, or in a Garden-grounde reasonably deepe digged, even so deepe as the Gardener doeth for the Radishe and Pauew in the Earth, to enioye the commoditie of them for the greater parte of the Winter: To preserve rootes drie, the owner or Gardener, after the plucking of rootes out of the Earth) ought to wash them verie cleane, with Conduite or spring water, after to cutte away all the small and heirie rootes, which done, to drie them in a shadowie place free from the beames of the Sunne, as being somewhat darke, if so bee these are slender and thinne of rinde, as bee the rootes of the Fennell, Succorie, Parsely, Endiue, Bojage, Buglosse, Sperage, and sundrie others like, but if the rootes be thicke of rinde, of a grosse essence and bigge, then may the owner laye them to drie in the Sunne at Poone day, as the roote of Gentiane, the Earthe Apple, Bionis, Raponticke, Aristolochia, or anie others like.

After that these be well dried, and like prepared, ought the owner to hang them vp in some Garret or open roome a high, bring sweete and dry (thzough the Sunnes daily shining on the place at noone) or open to the North, where nothing damaged by smoke, nor dust, nor that the Sunne beames may harne in any maner, euen as that aufficient and singular Whisition Hypocrates instructeth, who willethe the hearbes, floures, and rootes, so well fresh as dry, not to be bestowred, in any maner, in an open place, to be dried of the winde, but rather close stopped, in Glasses, Earthen pottes, and square Boxes of wood, to the ende, that these lose not their vertue, which otherwise they might soone do, by lying open to the winde.

All the field plants, floures and rootes, are stronger in nature, but in substance inferiour to the Garden plants, &c.

Among the wilde plantes, those growing on the mountaines or high hils, do excell the other in propertie.

Among all plants, those also are of a stronger nature which shall be of a liuelier colour better taste and sauour.

The force besides of plants, doo indure (for the moze part) vnto two or three yeeres.

The hearbes which a man would vse for the Witchin, ought rather to be gathered with a knife, somewhat aboue the earth, when these are shot vp vnto their perfite growth, as the Beets, Succorie, Arache, Borage, Marigold, Coleworste, Endiue, Clarie, Rocket, Wall, Pansie, Lettuce, Parsely, Mercury, and many others.

When the owner mindeth to vse certaine hearbs, hote of qualitie, he ought to gather them for the moze part, rather fresh, than drie, but if his intent be, rather to heate lesser, than seeing the moysture of the greene, doth much mitigate the heate consisting in it, so that cause is he willed rather to gather the hearbes for Whiske, befoze they begin to alter their colour.

This for a generall rule note, that all floures, hearbes, and rootes, ought carefully to be gathered in a drie faire season, and not in cloudie, mystie, noz rainy weather. The rootes besides are not to be gathered, but after the fall of the leanes, and these especially from the middle of September, vnto the beginning of the moneth of Nouember. But floures are chiefly to be gathered from the middle of the moneth of May vnto the beginning of Iuly, and after.

And for the fruits of sundry hearbes, these properly are to be gathered, according to the diuersitie of the hearbes.

The worthie remedies and secretes apayling against Snailles, Cankerwormes, the long bodied Mothes, Garden fleas and earth Wormes, which vitiate and gnaw, as well the pot hearbes, as trees and fruits.

Chap. 27.

There is none so dull of eyesight (as I beleue) which not thoroughly perceiueth and seeth, how that the Garden riches be diuerslie annoyed and harmed by diuers creeping wormes and beasts, as well aboue, as vnder the earth, and that through the same occasion, often procured to feeble and waste, and vilesse speedie remedies shall be exercised, that these in the ende do fall downe and perish.

For the Pestilent companie of these increase and are soe manye times to bee so manye or greate in number, that by no deuised meanes, neyther by fyre, noz Iron engine (from the Garden-grounds or fields) in which these once shalbe lodged or abiding, can either

either be dyuyn away or destroyed: therefore I shall do herein a most gratefull matter (as I suppose) both to husbandmen and Gardeners, if against this pestiferous annoyance and destruction, I shall offer and teach those woorthie remedies, that both the aunient and later men by great skill inuented and noted in their learned woorkes.

From woords to come vnto the matter I thinke it time to intreat, and first that singular Africanus among the Greeke wyters of husbandrie reporteth, that Garden-plants and rootes may well be purged and rid of the harmefull woymes, if their dennes or deepe holes bee smoaked, the winde aiding with the dung of the Cow or Dre burned.

That woorthie Plinie in his booke of histories writeth, that if the owner or Gardener sprinkleth the pure mother of the Dile Dline without any salt in it, doth also dyne the woymes away, and defend the plants and hearbes from being gnawne of them. And if they shall cleaue to the rootes of the plants, through malice or breeding of the dung, yet this weedeth them cleane away. The plants or hearbes wil not after be gnawne or harmed by garden fleas, if with the naturall remedie, as with the hearbe Rocket, the Gardener shall bestow his beds in manie places.

The Coleworts and all pot hearbes are greatly defended from the gnawing of the garden fleas, by Radish growing among them. And the woorthie Anadolius in his Greeke instructions of husbandrie affirmeth the like, so that some bitter sitches be also bestowed with the Radish in beds. And this seede committed in beds with the Radish and Rape, doth greatly auail, as the ancient witnesse of experience. The eage or sharpe vinegar doth also preuaile, tempered with the iuice of Henbane, and sprinkled on the garden fleas. To these, the water in which the hearbe Nigella Romana shall be steeped for a night, and sprinkled on the plants, as the græke Pamphilus reporteth, doth like preuaile against the garden fleas.

If from creeping thinges the Gardener woulde defend the seedes committed to the earth, from being gnawne or harmed, let him steepe those seedes for a night (as I afore vttered) before the sowing in the iuice of the Sengrene or Houselæke, which seedes also the Gardener shall preserve vngnawne, if hee bestow of them in the shell of that Snayle, which I suppose to be the same, named the Tortuise, as the

former

former authour Anatolius writeth, in which place I may not omit the same practise of the skilfull Palladius Rutilius, who reporteth, that the noysome vermine or creeping thinges will not breed of the Pot-hearbes, if the Gardener shall befoze the committing to the earth, dype all the seedes in the skinne of the Toxtnese, or solve the hearbe Mint in manie places of the garden, especially among the Colewoztes. The bitter fitch and Rocket (as I afoze offered) bestowed among the Pot-hearbes, so that the seedes bee sowne in the first quarter of the Moone, doe greatly auaille: as vnto the Canker and Walmer woymes belongeth, which in many places worke great iniurie both to gardens and Vines, may the owner or Gardener driue away with the figge tree ashes sprinkled on them and the hearbes.

There be some which sprinkle the plants and hearbes with the Lye made of the fig tree ashes, but it destroies the woymes, to strew (as experience reporteth) the ashes alone on them.

There be others which rather will to plant or sow that bigge Dnyon named in Latin Scilla or Squilla here and there in beddes, or hang them in sundrie places of the garden.

Others also will, to fire riuer Creysses with nailes in many places of the garden, which if they shall yet withstand or contend with all these remedies, then may the Gardener apply or exercise this deuise, in taking the Dre or Cow vyne, & the mother of Dyle Wine, which after the well mixing together, and heating ouer the fire, the same be stirred about vntill it be hote, & when thorough cold this mixture shall be sprinkled on the Pot-hearbes and trees, both marueylously p:cuale, as the skilfull Anatolius of experience reporteth.

The singuler Plinie in his practises uttereth, that those harmefull woymes, touched with bloudie rods, are likewise driuen away.

The worthy Palladius Rutilius reporteth, that if the owner or Gardener burne great bundels of the Carlike blades without heads dyped through all the Aliyes of the garden, and vnto these the dung of Backs added, that the saour of the smoke (by the helpe of the wind) may be driuen to many places, especially to those where they most abound and swarme, and the Gardener shall see so speedie a destruction, as is to be wondred at.

The worthy Plinie of great knowledge reporteth, that these may be

be dzinen from the Pot-herbes, if the bitter Fitch seedes bee mixed and solone together with them, or to the branches of trees. Crevisses hanged vp by the hozns in many places, both like pzenaille. These also are letted from encreasing, yea they in heapes presently gathered, are destroyed, as the Grækes report of obseruation, if the Gardener by taking certaine Walmer or Canker Wormes out of the garden next ioyning, shall seeth them in water with Dill, and the same being thzough cold, shall sprinckle on the hearbes or trees, that the mixture may wet and soke thzough the neastes, euen vnto the young ones, cleaning together, that they may taste thereof, will speedely dispatch them. But in this doing, the Gardener must be verie warie, and haue an attentine eye, that none of the mixture fall on his face nor hands. Besides these, the owner or Gardener may vse this remedie certain, and easily prepared, if about the bigge armes of trees, or stemmes of the hearbes, he kindle and burne the stronger Lime and Wyinstone together. Or if the owner make a smoke with y^e Musheromes growing vnder the Nut tree, or burne the hooles of Cotes, or the gumme Galbanum, or els make a smoke with the Parts hozne, the winde aiding, by blowing towards them.

There be also some, which infuse the Lime ashes in water for thre dayes, with which they after sprinckle abundantly, both the hearbs and trees. Many besides make soft the seedes, steeped before their committing to the earth, in the Lye made of the figge ashes.

The husbandmen and Gardeners in our time, haue found out this easie practise, being now common euerie where, which is on this wise, that when these, after shoures of raine are copen into the warme sunne, or into places standing against the sunne, may early in the morning shake either their frutes and leanes of the Potte Hearbes, or the boughes of the trees, for these are yet stiffe thzough the colde of the night, are procured of the same the lightyer and sooner to fall, nor able after to recouer vp againe, so that the Walmer Wormes thus lying on the ground, are then in a readinesse to the killed of the Gardiner.

If the owner minde to destroy any other creeping thinges noyous to Hearbes and Trees (which Palladius and Rutilius name, both Verbe & Leake wasters) then let him harken to this inuention & deuise of the Græke Dyophanes, who willet to purchase maw of a
Weather

Whether Sheepe new killed, and the same as yet full of his excrementall filth, which lightly couer with the earth in the same place, where these most haunt in the garden: so after two dayes, shall the Gardener find there, that the Mothes with long bodies, & other creeping thinges will be gathered in diuers companies to the place right ouer it, which the owner shall either remoue & carrie further, or dig & burie very deepe in the same place, that they may not after arise or come forth, which when the Gardener shall haue exercised the same but twice or thise, he shall vtterly extinguishe, and quite destroy all the kinds of creeping thinges that annoy and spoile the garden plants. The husbandmen in Flanders, arme the stockes, and compasse the bigger armes of their trees with wispes of straw handsomly made & fastned or bound about, by which the Walmer woymes are constrained to creepe vp to the tops of the trees, and there staye, so that as it were by snares and engins laide, these in the end are either dynen away, or thus in their way begun, are speedily or soone after procured to turne backe againe. As vnto the remedies of the Snayles particularly belongeth, these may the Gardener likewise chase from the Kitchen hearbes, if he either sprinkle the new mother of the Dils Olive, or soote of the chimney on the hearbes, as if hee bestowed the bitter sitch in beds among them, which also anaileth against other noisome woymes and creeping thinges, as I afoze vttered, that if the Gardener would possesse a greene and delectable garden, let him then sprinkle diligently all the quarters, beds, and borders of the garden, with the mixture of water, and pouder of Fennie-Creke tempered together, or set vp right in the middle of the garden, the whole bare heade without flesh of the vnchast Ass, as I afoze wrote.

That worthis man Iulius Fronto, reporteth that all Kitchen hearbes may greatly bee holpen, if among them the hearbe Rocket shall either be sowne or planted. But an intollerable iniurie shall bee wrought to the husbandly Gardener, if the Goose dung dissolued in brine, be sprinkled on the Kitchen hearbes, as these worthis writers Democritus Fronto, and Damageron in their chosen precepts of the Greeke husbandrie, haue left noted to our age.

The

The skilfull inuentions and helpes against the Garden Moles, Antes,
Gnattes, Flies, and Frogges. euering, harming and wasting
as well kitchin Hearbes, as Trees and fruites.
Chapter. 28.

Foasmuch as the Moles in many places of Garden-groundes,
through their casting vp and hollowing of the same, the Seedes a-
foze bestowd in beddes they on such wise vnconer, and the plants in
like maner turn vp, and vnbare of earth, to the great grieve and paine
of the carefull Gardeners. in daily renning and repairing of their so-
mer labours, so that cause hath bee inlt occasion to trauell and busie
himselfe, in searching out, and denissing by all skilful meanes, in what
maner hee may surest and best preuaile against this harmefull blinde
beast. And that I may do a most gratefull matter to all Gardeners
in the same, I will here vtter all such singular practises, as either
the woorthie Greekes or Latines haue vttered and noted to bee away-
lable against them.

First the skilful Paxanus hath left in writing, that if the Gardener
shal make hollow a big Put, or boze a hollow hole into some sounde
piece of wood beeing narrow, in filling the one or the other with Ro-
sine, Witch, Chasse, and Bzinzon, of eache so much as shal suffice to
the filling of the Putte, or hollow hole in the wood, which thus pre-
pared in a readinesse, stop euery where with diligence, all the goings
forth, & breathing holes of the Mole, that by those the fume or smoke
in no maner may issue out, yet so handle the matter, that one mouth
and hole be onely left open, and the same so large, that well the Put
or vessell kindled within, may be laid within the mouth of it, wherby
it may take the winde of the one side, which may so send in the saour
both of the Rosin and Bzinzstone into the hollow tombe, or resting
place of the Mole: by the same practise so woorkmanly handled, in fil-
ling the holes with the smoake, shal the owner or Gardener either
dye quite away all the Moles in that ground, or finde them in short
time dead.

There be some which take the white Pesewort, or the rind of Cy-
nocrambes beaten and sarged, and with the Warlie Meale and Eggs
finely tempered together, they make both Cakes & Pasties wrought
with Tallow and Milke, and those they lay within the Moles denne
or hole. Albertus of woorthie memoize reporteth, that if the owner

or Gardener closeth or diligently stoppeth the mouthes of the Holes with the Earlike, Onion, or Leake, shall either drive the Moles away, or kill them, through the strong saour, striking or breathing into them. Many there bee, whiche to drive away these harmefull Moles, doe bring up young Cats in their Garden-ground, and make tame Measelles, to the ende that either of these, through the hunting after them, may to drive away this pestiferous annoyance, being taught to watch at their straight passages and mouthes of the holes comming forth. Others there be also, which diligently fill and stop vp their holes with the red Okere or Ruddell, and iuice of the wilde Cucumber, or solue the Seedes of Palma Christi, being a kinde of Sacyrion in beddes, through whiche they will not after cast by, nor tarrie thereabout. But some exercise this easie practise, in taking a liue Mole, and burning the powder of Whimstone about him, being in a deepe Earthen potte, through which he is procured to crie, all others in the meane time as they report, are mooued to resort thither. There are some besides, which lay silke snares at the mouth of their holes. To the simple Husbandmen may this easie practise of no cost suffice, in setting downe into the Earth a stiffe rod or greene bzaunch of the Elder tree. The worthy Plinie which hath left to memorie skilful practises, reporteth, that the mother of the Oyle Olive alone, sprinkled on the heape of Wismires or Antes, killeth them. This Authour also writeth, that the Wismires are wicked annoyers to trees, which the Gardener or husbandman saith he, may force to forsake and leane, if he bestrike the neather partes of the trees rounde about with the powder of the Ruddell, and Liquide Pitch or Tarre, mixed together, and hang also by the place the fish named of the worthy Rutilius after the Greeke writers husbandrie Coracinum, and of Ruellius Graculum, for on such wise handled, they will resort and gather all into one place, whereby the husbandly Gardener may the speedelie destroy them. Others there be, which with the powder of the Lupines and oyle Olive tempered together, doe bestrike the lower partes of trees and plants, for the letting of them in creeping vp. Many kill them as I afore vttered, with the only mother of the oyle Olive. The skilful Neapolitane Rutilius reporteth, that if the great company of Wismires or Ants haue deep holes in y Garden-ground, those may the owner chase away, or kill in the ground, by stopping the

the mouthes of the holes, with the heart of the Dyle. If they creepe abroad, then sift all the Alleis where these runne with bright Ashes or else scoze the grounde thicke together with the red Okare or white Chalke, or make long strikes with Dyle on the Earth. Further he writeth, that the husbandly Gardener may drine away Wismires, if on the mouthes of their holes hee sprinkle the powder of Organic and Wrimstone beaten together, or burne the emptie shells of Snails, and with the ashes of the same, stoppe abundantly the mouthes of their denues and holes. In which deuise, this Rutilius omitted the Storax that of Paxanius the Græke, out of whome hee borrowed this conclusion, is added. The words of Paxanius be on this wise: If the owner salet hie, shall burne certaine Antes or Emotes in the middle of the Garden, the others of the sauours will creep away. To these, if about the mouthes of the Emots holes the careful Gardener shall smear the grosser Turpentine, the Emotes or Antes will not after come forth, and these hee may expell or drine away from their proper resting place, or dwelling together, if the shellie couerings of Snayles, burned with Storax Calamita, and beaten to powder, or the ashes sifted, hee shall after sprinkle on the heape of the Wismires. And the owner shall thoroughly destroy the Antes, if he sprinkle on them the iuce of Cyrenaicum dissolved and well mixed in Dyle. This Authour further reporteth, that the Emotes wil not creepe on the plantes nor trees, if the husbandly Gardener shall diligently sprinkle the bodies and stemmes of them, with the powder of the bitter Lupines and mother of Dyle, well mixed or boiled together. The selfe same matter shall the Gardener performe, if he compasse their holes with white and clære Wool or Bombast, or that he mark on the ground long strikes, or forme round circles, with white Chalke, or red Okare, all those waies especially that these most often haunt, or compas their holes with Organic as I alsoe vttered: so by y^e like doing as he affirmeth, the Emots after will not only leaue the creeping vp on y^e plants, but refuse also to ascend ouer the rings made with white Chalk about y^e bodies of trees. There be others which report, y^e the Emots wil not creep to that hony pot set on the ground, about which the like circles with Chalk or red Okare shall be formed, yea though the same were left vncouered, yet is it knowen to many, that the Ants are maruellous desirous of Hony, & other sweet things.

The skilfull Neapolitane Rutilius willeth, that the diligent Husbandman annoint or bestrike the stemmes of Plantes, and the bodies of Trees, with the redde Okere, Butter, and liquid Witche mired wel together. There bee certaine of the Greeke Writers of Husbandrie, whiche will the thicke Iuie Garlandes to bee bounde about the bodies of Trees and Vines, that by the same skilfull devise, the Ants lodging vnder the shadow of these, as then pledges they slay and kill.

There be many which report, that the like may be wrought and done with the Wuls Gaule, mother of Dyle, and Liquid Witche, smeared about the bodies of trees. The singular Plinie reporteth, that the Sea mud or Mhes, stopped diligently into their holes, is a most sure remedy against the Emotes, so that the places be not moist or waterie. But with the surest practise and remedie of all, are the Wisemires killed with the herbe Heliotropium, Some suppose that y water in which the crude Tile shalbe infused for a time, to be enemy to them. The Gardener may drine away Gnats, if he sprinkle on the beds & plants, the decoction of Drganie in vineger, as that skilful Democritus in his husbandry hath noted. To these y owner may sprinkle on the Plants, the infusion of Rue in water, or vse the decoction of the herbe fleabane, or els make a smoke either with Brimston, or Cummine, or the dry Dre dung, or the gumme Bdellium. The learned Pliny uttereth, that y Gardener may drine these away with y smoke of Galbanum burned, & that worthie Neapolitane Rutilius, of experience affirmeth, that if the owner either sprinkle the new mother of Dyle, or soote of the chimney on y plantes, it likewise drineth them away. That skilful Greeke Berytus hath left in writing, how y the Gardener may drine the flies farre off with this fearefull device if mixing the pouders of the Hellebo, or Ræsewort, & Dypiment with milke, the same be sprinkled on the plants and place where the flies most hant, it either hastily drineth them away, or kills the same after. The selfe same will the common Alum beaten with Drganie, and tempered with Milke preuaile against the flies: For what plants and herbes shalbe sprinkled with this mixture wil not after be resorted vnto or touched of flies. The Bayberies with the blacke Ræseworste beaten together, and infusing it in milke or water and Honey mixed, both like profit: for this mixture sprinkled on the Plants, and
places

places where the flies most haunt, doth after, as it were by a poyson, hastily kill the flies, or other wise so: ce them to flye speedily away neuer to returne.

As touching remedies against the Frogges, which in the summer nightes are wont to bee disquieters to the wearied husbandmen, through their daily labour, by chyrping and loude noyse making, let the Husbandman exercise this helpe and secrete, borrowed of the skilfull Greeke Africanus which is on this wise: Set on some banck (saith he) a Lanthorne lighted, or other bright light before them, or on some tree (saith he) so hang a light that by the brightnesse of the same light, it may so shine vpon them, as if it were the sunne, which handled on this wise, will after cause them to leane their chirping and loude noyse making: a practise tryed by many of later yeares.

The skilfull Greeke Beritius reporteth, that if the Husbandman burie in some banks fast by, the gauls of a Goate, the Frogs will not afterwarde gather to that place,

The rare practises and secretes, both of the auncient and later writers of husbandrie.
 ○ against Serpents of the Garden, and any others venoming as well men as the Kitchin hearbes, trees, and squites.

Chap. 29.

Florentius (a singular and diligent interpreter of the matters of the field) wrote, that serpents in the garden-ground or elsewhere, will not lodge or abide, if the owner sow or plant in borders about, or in apt corners of the garden, either the wormewood, Mugwort, or Southernwood, which if these shal some where happen to haunt, then may the Gardener (as he writeth) drive them incontinent furth of the ground, if he make a smoke either with the Lillie rootes, Hartes horne, or Goates hoores.

The skilfull Rutilius uttereth, that all Serpents be forced out of the ground, by euerie sorte of sauer, and stinking smoke, flying abroad with the winde.

The learned Democritus affirmeth, that the serpents assuredly do dye, if the Gardener straw or throw Oken leaues on them, or if anie spit teth fasting into their mouth gaping or wide open.

The well practised Apuleius writeth, that these stricken but once with

With a tough reed or willow rodde, are mightely astonied, but giuing them many strokes do recouer & waie strong againe. Tarentinus (a skillfull writer of the Greeke husbandrie) denieth, that any can bee harmed of a Serpent, if the person also be annointed with the iuice of a Radish, or that he hath eaten of the Radish, which matter (Athenaus and Galen, with many other worthie Authours) ascribe to the Drenge or Lemon, and they confirme the same, with a pleasant Historie.

The former Florentinus offereth, an other singuler practise against serpents of the garden, to be wrought after this maner: Lay (saith he) the fat of the Hart in the garden earth, or els burie the Centauries roote, or the Geate stone, or els the Eagle, or Haytes dung, & the serpents will refuse the ground or at least, not come neare the place, and euery venomous worme wilbe dyen away, if the Gardener by taking Nigella, Pelitorie, Gabanum, of the Harts horne, Wylope, Wyminstone, Peucedanum, & the Goates hooves, shal diligently bring these to powder, and infusing the whole for a time in the strongest vinegar, shal after make litle bals of the mirture, with which through dyed cause a sanour and a smoke. For through the saunour of these matters sparsed in the ayre, all creeping vermine will either hastily (for the great feare) forsake the ground, or die there incontinent. The same authour Florentinus, reporteth, that the serpents may like bee gathered on a heape, into an old deep-poudering tubbe, as fish in a wele or bow-net, if the same be deep set about that place of the garden or field, where these most lurke & haunt: for after the speedie resorting of these to the brinke of it, they fall willingly in, not able after to recover themselves out. Plinie writing of the withie named Siler, reporteth this, that the serpents refuse, both the tree and fruite, for which cause, the husbandmen made them stauies of the wood to carrie about with them. But this by a most certaine experience or triall, proued & confirmed, that by making a smoke with olde shoes burned, the serpents incontinent sped away, nor these onely flie out of the garden ground, field, or house, but such as are entered into men, by dead sleepe in the sommer, in sleeping open mouthed, or with open mouth, in the field, do like come forth with the said smoke. Which matter (Marcus Gatinaris a famous Physitian) confirmeth, who reporteth that y like happened to a certaine man in his time, to whom after infinite medicines

cines and most effectuous remedies were ministred, and none of them prevailed, at the last this imploied, fell out most luckilie, and wonderfull of all others, in burning the leathers of olde shoes, and receiving both smoake & saour by a Tunnel into the bodie. For as soon as this hidious beast (which was a mightie Adder) felt the saour of this smoke, he was seene to the standers about to come out at the fundament, to the mightie astonishment and wonder of all the beholders. And this wortie secret, easie to be prepared, I thought here good to place, that the same, a like case happening, might be profitable to euerie person. But in this place is not to be omitted, that serpents greatly hate the fire, not for the same cause, that this bulleth their sight, but because the nature of fire is to resist poyson. These also hate the strong saour far syping, which the Garlike & red Onions procure. they loue the Sawins tree, the Iuie, and Fennel, as Modes do & Sage, and Snakes the hearbe Rocket. But they are mightely displeased, & sorest hate the Ash tree, in somuch that the serpents neither to the morning nor longest euening shadowes of it, will draw neare, but rather than the same, & flye far off. As a like matter Plinie reporteth, was on a time proued, by inclosing a serpent, within the large circle made of greene Ash tree leaues, in the middle of which a quicke fire made, to the terror of the serpent, for that end to proue, whether she had rather run ouer the circle, then draw neare to the fire, which neuer thelesse (the fire kindling more and more) at the last, rather crept to the fire, where she perished, then by any meanes would draw neare to the circle, of the Ash tree leaues. Yet here learne, the marueylous benignitie of nature, which permitteth not the serpents to come forth of the earth, before the Ash tree buddeth forth, nor to hide them againe, before the leaues fall off. The singuler Poet Virgil saith, that the smoke made of Rosen or Galbanum, both hastely chase and drive the serpents away.

These hetherto vttered, for the driving away & killing of serpents. But here was almost forgotten, that the leaues of Ferne, doe chase away the serpent: for which cause, many skilfull thinke it profitable, either to sow, or draw the Ferne, in such places where the serpents haunt. The Neapolitane Rutilius addeth, that if the leaues of the same bee burned, they (with the saour onely) will flee or creepe hastely away, yea and force them to change their lodgings,

far

far from the garden-ground or field.

Were a doubt may be made, whether the same be to purpose here to rectifie, that the worthy Albertus reporteth of the round Aristolochia with the field Frog, and a certaine proportion of wixing Inke diligently laboured, and mixed with these, to make the Serpents immediately to quaille as dead, if any of the mixture be wixten withall, and throwne before them.

But I thinke it high time to come vnto the remedies, which are both readie and easie to be prepared.

If that any shall be bitten of a Serpent, vnlesse hee haue a Fever, and drinke a certaine quantitie of the iuice of the Ashe leaues, with pleasant white wine, and applyeth also of the fresh leaues to the place bitten, shall in short time see a worthy secreete, greatly to be maruailed at, and by happie successe, proued of manie.

Here briefly to conclude, if the Gardener bestoweth the fresh elder floures where the Serpents dayly haunt, they will hastily depart the place, yea these by report (artely bestowed in the garden-ground) do in short time destroy the Poxes, the Cankerwoymes, and Palmers breeding in trees.

The other helpes and remedies necessarie to bee vttered in this Chapter, shall in apt places bee declared in the second part, where we purpose to intreate particularly of most hearbes growing in the garden.

The laudable deuises and cunning helpes against the Scorpions, Toder, Garden-mite, Weasels, and all other greater beasts wasting and corrupting as well the kitchen hearbes as fruites.

Chap. 30.

PLinie reporteth, that if stippes of the greene Heliotropium, be set round about the place where the Scorpions frequent, that they will not after creepe thence. But if the owner either laye or strewe vpon the Scorpions, the whole hearbe, they incontinent (as he affirmeth) dye.

That skilfull wixiter Diophanes (in his Greeke commentaries of husbandrie) vttereth, and the like many other, that the fresh Radvish, either laide or strewed on the Scorpions, killeth them incontinent.

To

To these, if any annointeth the hands circumspectly with the iuice of the Madithe, hee may after handle Scorpions or anie other venemous thing, without danger.

This Authour further addeth, that a smoke made with Saudarach and butter, or the fat of a Goat, will drive away both them, and other venemous things, and by burning one Scorpion, all the others flee forth of the ground.

If anie boyleth the Scorpion that stung him, or anie other in Oile, and annointeth the sore place with the same, it shal greatly auaille.

The like commeth to passe, if he may kil and bruse the same on the stinging, but perilous wil the same stinging be, if he refraine not the eating of Bast all that day of the stinging. Florentinus reporteth, that the iuice of the Figge tree leaues, dropped on the stinging, mightily auayleth.

The learned Plinie affirmeth, that the Ashes of the Scorpion drunke in Wine (if the fit of the Feuer bee not vpon the person) to bee a singular remedie, as the powder of Wormes burned, to persons hauing Wormes, or to beasts the like ministred, and anie bitten of a mad Dogge, if the haire of the same be burned and drunke, doo greatly auaille.

The Wodes, (as the Greeke and Latine professors of husbandrie write,) may be driven forth of the Garden-ground, with those remedies, that the Serpents: for which cause, the remedies and helps against them to repeat I think here superfluous.

The Wils (as the lerned Apuleius writeth) wil in no maner harm or walte those seedes committed to the Earth, which befoze the sowing are stepped a time in the Caule of an Dre.

They will be killed in the ground, if the Gardener shall stoppe their commings forth, with the fresh leaues of Rhododaphnes.

There be (of the Greeke writers of husbandry) which wil that like portions of the wilde Cucumber, or Henbane, or of y bitter Almonds and black Roseworste, be orderly brused, and tempered with Beale, the same after wrought into Balles with Oile, to be laied at y holes of the fiede, and house Wyse. Plinie writeth, that the seedes (befoze the bestowing in the earth,) infused either in the Caule of a Weasell, or the ashes of him committed to the earth with the seedes, doth like

defend them from being harmed of Wile, yet the plantes springing out of these are greatly misliked, for that they then giue the sauour of such a ranck beast, so that the seedes are far better commended, to be streped afoze in the gaule of an Dre.

The skilful Africanus vttereth, that the Gardener may eyther kil or vaine away Weasels, if he mixe salt Armoniacke with wheate paste, and lay of the same in such place, where these often haunt. Others there be, which wil the careful Gardener to get one alive, and cutting off both taile and testicles, to let him so passe again, for by that meanes (others perceiuing the like sight) wil depart the place, the easie experience of which matter, wil after vying a credite to thee in the same. For the vying away of the greater beasts, conceiue these remedies folowing, that if the Gardener shal water the seedes besetted, with the olde vaine in which the ordure of a Dog shalbe infused for a time, they shal after be defended in the growing vp, from the spoile of greater beasts.

The selfe same doth the woorthie Democritus affirme to come to passe (as I afoze vttered) if that the owner take to the number of ten Kiner or Sea Creauises, and in putting them into an earthen pottle full of water he set the same in the Sun for ten daies, to be wel heated and vapoized through the hot beames, which thus handled, let him sprinkle on the beds and plants, that hee would haue defended from the aye, and great beasts: yet may he not water the yonger plants, but euerie third day, until these be growen vp stronger. The skilfull Africanus, and other woorthie writers of Husbandrie, report, that if either the Pyonic or hearbe Personata be buried, or otherwise sowed about banckes or bozdures, in the Garden or fiede, are after (as by a secret protection) preserved, that neither the great nor smaller beasts, wil after spoile the plants there growing. But if the husbandman would haue his trees preserved, from being soze eaten and wasted of the greater beasts, then let him exercise (after the mind of Plinie) this easie practise, in casting or sprinkling on the leaues, the water in which Dre dung hath been dissolved, so that hee bee sure those times, that raine wil fall within a day after, to the cleane purging againe of the branches and leaues of that sauoure, a matter in verie deede wittily deuised for the purpose.

The

The skillfull practises and remedies against haile, lightnings
and tempests, beating downe and spoyling the Kir-
chin herbes, trees, and fruites.

Chapter. 51.

For the Haile, which for the more part destroyeth both the labours
of the Oren and men, conceiue these fewe remedies following.
That if the husbandman would be auoid the same danger at hand or
readie to fall, then let him draw about the ground (whether it be
field, Orchard or Garden) the skin of a Seale, or Crocodil, or Hyena,
and hang it after at the entrie or coming in of the place, as the wo-
thie Philostratus, in his Greeke Commentaries of husbandrie, hath
noted. Others there be, which seeing the haile at hand, by holding vp
a mightie Glasse, do so take the Image of the darke cloude, directly
ouer the place, to the end, the obiect by the same remedie (as Rutilius
reporteth) may offende, whereby as doubled, it may giue place to the
other, and on such wise be speedely auerted and moued away.

There were some (as Philostratus writeth) which with the
right hand drawing the Parrish Toxtoise on her backe, laboured
so about the Garden-grounde or fildes, and returned to the place
where they beganne, they so laide her vpight in the furrowes made
with her backe, and shod cloddes of either side, that she might not
fall, neither to one nor other side, but abide steeadie vpight, to the ende
she might so beholde the bigge and thick cloudes, directly ouer the
place. And the same, at such times they exercised in the first houre of
the day, or night. Certaine others (seeming to be of greater skill)
when the haile approached, did spread ouer euerie space of the Garden
or field, white Wine, or fastned in some place right against the Tem-
pest imminent, a liue Dole, with the winges spreade abroad, which
two remedies also much auails against the lightnings and haile, as
saith the singular writer of husbandrie Iunius Columella, in his li-
tle treatise of the Garden.

To utter here the populare helpe against thunder, lightninges,
and the dangerous haile, when the tempest approacheth through the
cloude arising, as by the loude noise of Gunnes shotte here and there,
with the loude sounde of Bels, & such like noises which may happen:

I thinke the same not necessarie, noꝝ properly available to the benefit of the Garden.

The famous learned man Archibius which wrote vnto Antiochus king of Syria, affirmeth, that tempests shall not be harmefull to plants noꝝ fruits, if the speckled Tode inclosed in a new earthen pot, be buried in the middle of the Gardē oꝝ field. Others there are, which hang the feathers of the Eagle, oꝝ Seales skin, in the middle of the Garden, oꝝ at the foure coꝝners of the same.

For these three, as by a certaine secret propertie (and soꝝ truth) by a maruellous repugnancie do resist the lightnings, and that of these (the aboue saide) in no maner to be harmed oꝝ blasted, is to memorie of the posteritie committed, and by the experiences oꝝ trials of manie skilfull men confirmed. Wherfoꝝ Tiberius Cesar (as repoꝝteth Suetonius) was wont to weare a Garlande of Bayes, and to couer his proper tente all ouer with Seale skinnes, at such times as thunder and lightning hapned, supposing himselfe to be defended from these, which he maruellously feared. Plinie repoꝝteth that Bulbus (not soꝝ the smalnesse only of his bodie) escapeth the foꝝce of lightning, but thꝛough a secrete and naturall repugnance doeth this auaille against the stroke of lightning.

The laudable deuises and helpes against Frost, blasting of trees, Mysts, and rust, which be enemies as well to Garden Herbes as fruites.

Chapter. 32.

To most men it is manifest, that there are two kinde of celestiaall iniuries, the one, that men name tempestes, in which the haile, hoꝝme, and such like are ment.

These (when anie happen) are named a mightier violence and working of heauen moued soꝝward, as Plinie repoꝝteth, by the fearefull starres, which be Virgiliz, Hyades, Canicula, Aꝛcturus, Fidicula, Haedi, Orion, Aquila, and sundꝛie others, carefullie obserued of the wꝛiters of Husbandꝛie and Whisicke, and of them moꝝte diligētlie noted.

The other kinde is wont to happen, the aire being calme and quiet; and in faire nightes, no feeling to be discerned, but when the same is come to passe and wꝛought, which bewailed calamitie is one while wont.

wont to be named rustie, an other whiles burning, and an other whiles blasting, that to all crescent thinges is a sterilitie, and at one word a destruction, so that all is caused by heauen, and wont especially to happen in the spring time. The blasting and burning of the blossomes of Aple trees, the floures of Vines, and Cozne, are caused thzough the iniurie of frostes happening in the night, and not as many report, to be wrought thzough the sunnes sharpe heate, burning hastily by the dewe, or the moisture entring in, and cozrupting the heades of Cozne. The same also wasting the tender buddes, plants, and bzanches, is commonly named burning, for that it burneth and consumeth in places so blacke as any coale. The blasting besides of the tender blossomes of Trees and Vines, is named liberation, for that this especially is caused through the blast and striking of some constellation. To these we adde the rust, as a mightie enimie to fruites. The worthie Plinie reporteth, that the rust and burning, becaused onely of cold, which happeneth in the night time, and before the sunne rising, so that the sunne is not worker of these. And the time when the like succeedeth, is knowne to be after the wind of sun-drie skillfull wzriters of husbandrie, at the change or full Moone, some Starres then of the first bignesse ayding, in the rising, or setting. The suspected times, and dayes of the rust for iudging of the good or euill successe of fruites, is knowne in Aprill, according to the falling out of S. George and S. Markes day, and the ninth day of May, for the caulmenesse and clearenesse of the ayre. This celestial sterilitie, both neither happen, nor can not euerie yeare, for the proper courses of the Starres, both in the descending and ascending in heauen, with the radiations or asperits one to another. In the which working, who can not but wonder, and for the same honour and reuerence, the marueylous benignitie and goodnesse of almightie God towarde mankind? Yet of the constellations afoze mentioned, & of the others which are infinite in number, the diligent antiquitie onely feared thies of these greatly, and obserued them for that cause, as the diligent Plinie noted, and to memorie committed. First the constellation Virgilie for the fruites, the constellation Aquila for the cozne, & the constellation Canicula for the gathering of fruites, so that these for the same cause were named the Iudiciall Starres, to foreknow the seasons by. In whose dayes of the first appearance, if the aire cleare and calme sent

downe a kindly and feeding iuice to the earth, then was it a sure note
 to them, that such thinges sowne, would grow and increase prosper-
 ously. Contrariwise, if the Skie at those times sprinkled a dewie
 cold on the plants and crescent thinges, then as a bitternesse mixed
 contrarie to the sweete and nourishing iuice, the same so slewe or kil-
 led the tender thinges, shot for the appearing about the earth. But to
 come to the matter: there is neither frost, haile, storme, nor tempest,
 so harmefull to certaiue fieldes or garden-groundes, through which
 they at any time cause the sterilitie and penurie of victuals, as the
 rust and burning heate doe, for these falling and working in open
 countries, procure for the moze part through their harmes a publike
 calamitie, and present dearth, to the auoiding of which, shall here bee
 vttered these skilfull remedies, inuented of the auncient writers of
 husbandrie. If the carefull Gardener would withstand the force of
 frost and rust appoaching, then let him burne stoe of chaffe, if such
 plentie be there, or neare hand, but for lacke of the same, may bee vsed
 the drye wædes plucked vp out of the garden or field, and the bigge
 Thistles, or other wast fruites, in manie places of the same, especial-
 ly towarde that way which the winde then bloweth, for on such wise
 handled, Diophanes in his precepts of husbandrie writeth, that the
 euil nigh or at hand is auerted. The selfe same practise may bee vsed
 against thicke and darke mists. Beritius in his Greeke precepts of
 husbandrie giueth warning, that the husbandman or Gardener di-
 ligently marke, whether the same be gathered in the ayre, which rea-
 die to fall, let him then burne incontinent the left hoze of the Dre,
 with either Cow or Dre dung, making with them a mightie smoke
 round about the garden-ground or field, but the smoke especially
 directed by the winde, in fleeing against it. The worthy Apuleius
 wrote, that the smoke of three riuer Creauisses, burned with the Dre
 or Gotes dung, or with chaffe, to be a most sure helpe and remedie a-
 gainst the like, that if the same be already fallen, I meane the rust,
 the Gardener may recover the harme after this maner, as the skil-
 full Beritius reporteth, in taking the rootes or leaues of the wild Cu-
 cumber or Colocynthis, which after the brusing and infusing in wa-
 ter for a night, sprinkle & wet the places wel taken with the rust be-
 fore the sun rising. The like may the Gardener worke & do, with the
 Fig or Oke tree ashes, sprinkled in the place endamaged with rust.

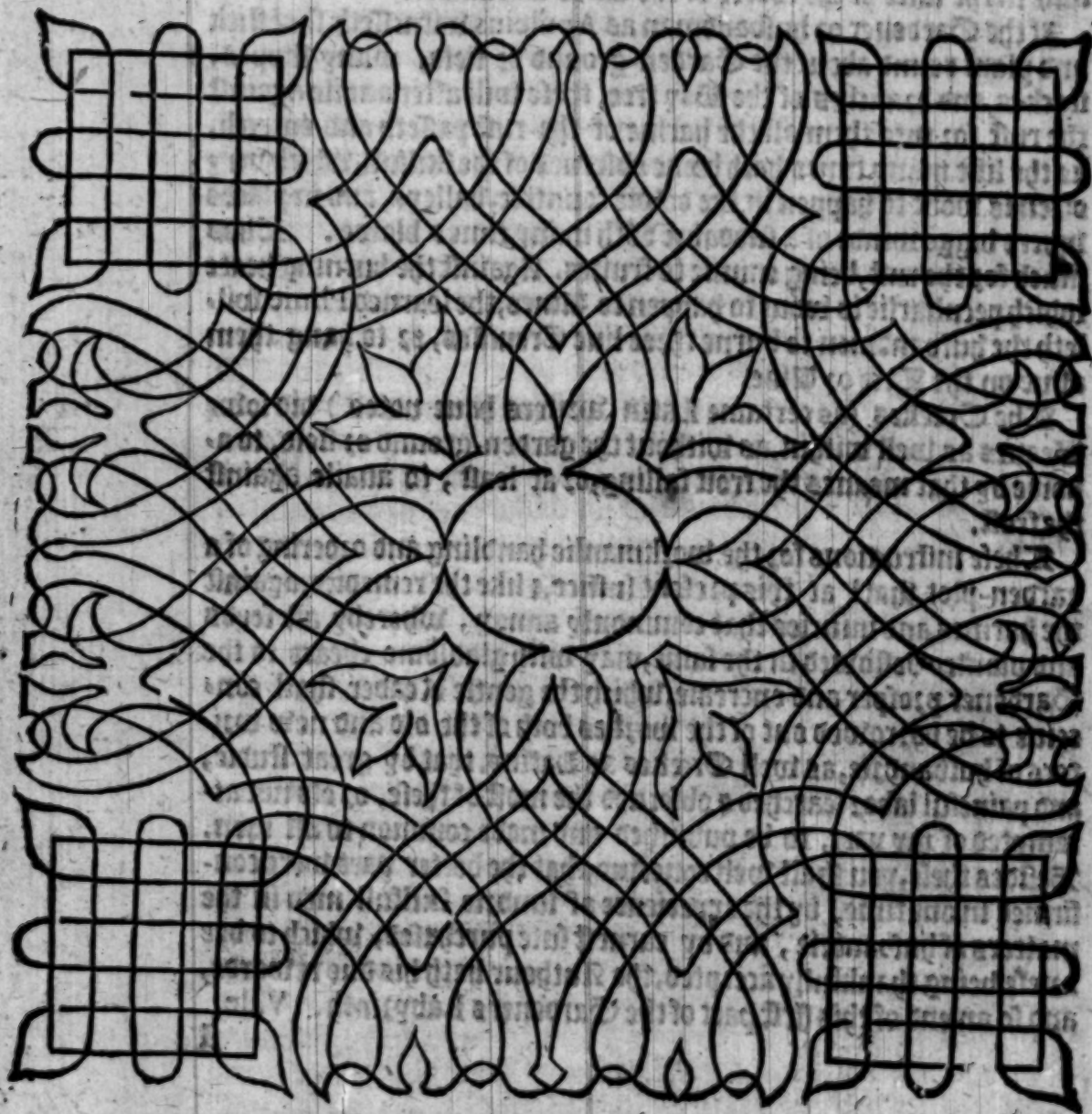
All seedes of the garden or feld are defended, as reporteth Anato-
lius from all iniuries and monsters, if the husbandman or Gardener
before the committing of seedes to the earth, doth infuse them for a
time in the iuice of the rootes of the wilde Cucumber.

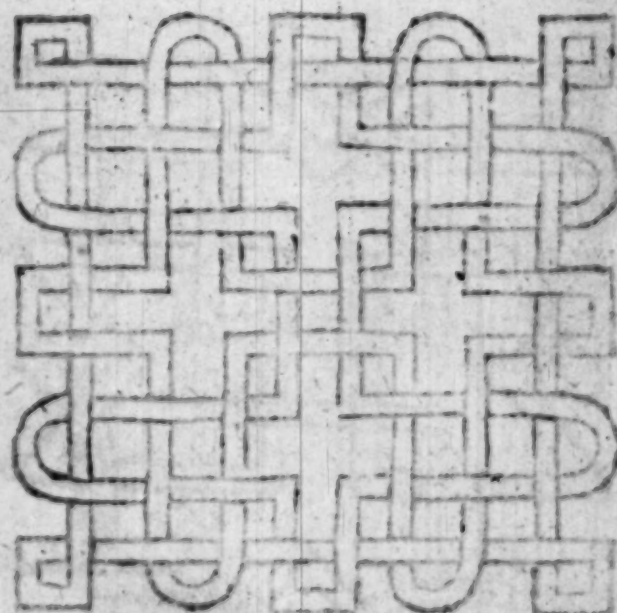
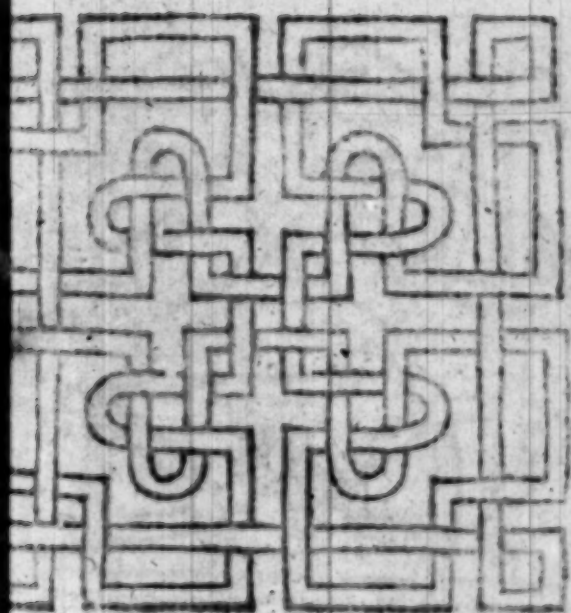
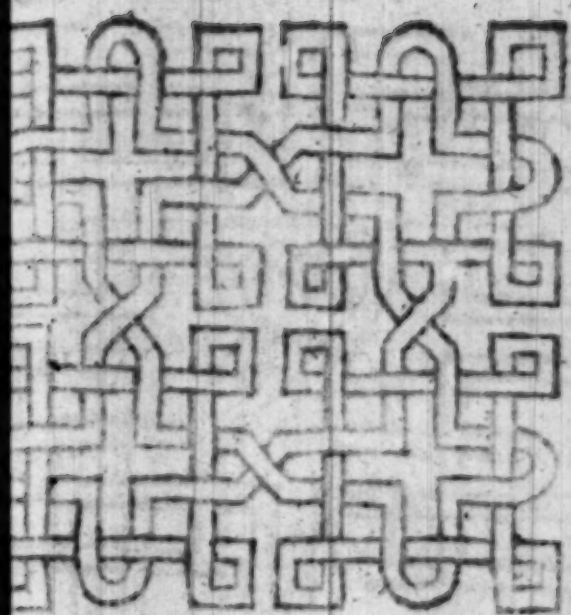
If the Gardener or husbandman as Apulcius witnesseth, shall stick
and plant round about the Garden-ground or field, many Apples,
stockes, and branches of the Bay tree, these will after auaille against
the rust, for into them all the harme of the rust passeth and entrencheth,
as the like many times hath bene obserued of the skilfull, which very
often is wont to happen in the betwixt countrie, valleys, and in places
where bigge winde of a suddaine doth many times blowe. Thus
much for the rust, being enimie to fruites. Against the burning heate
which peculiarie is wont to happen to Vines, the learned Plinie wil-
leth the husbandmen to burne thre liue Creuilles, or to hang them
aloue on the Tree or Vine.

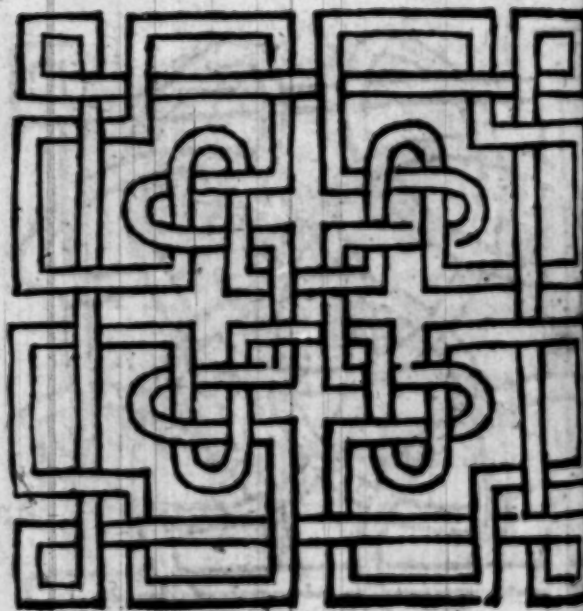
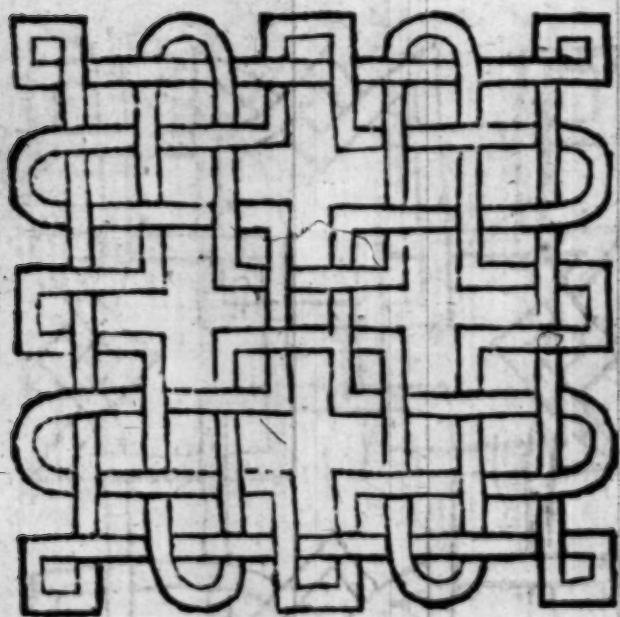
The Greekes (as certaine Latin writers haue noted) did soe
Beanes as well within, as without the garden-ground or field, to a-
uoid by that meanes the frost falling, or at least, to auaille against
the frost.

These instructions for the workmanlie handling and ordering of a
garden-plot, shall at this present suffice, & like the remedies, against
the harmes and iniuries that commonly annoy, whereby all seeds
and plantes bestowed in the same, may with glad some cheare to the
Gardener prosper and encrease, which the gentle Reader shall con-
ceiue to be borrowed out of the workes both of the old and new wi-
ters of husbandrie, as well Greekes as Latins, that by great studie,
and painefull labo; searched & obserued the most of these, or els not at-
tempted of my part, to be published and made common to all men.
Besides these, you shall well conceiue, that the better part were con-
firmed in our time, by the experience of sundrie skilfull men in the
matters of husbandrie, and by earnest sute purchased, which to bee
briefe being thankfully accepted, the Authour hath his due rewarde,
and so an end of this first part of the Gardeners Labyrinth. Vale.

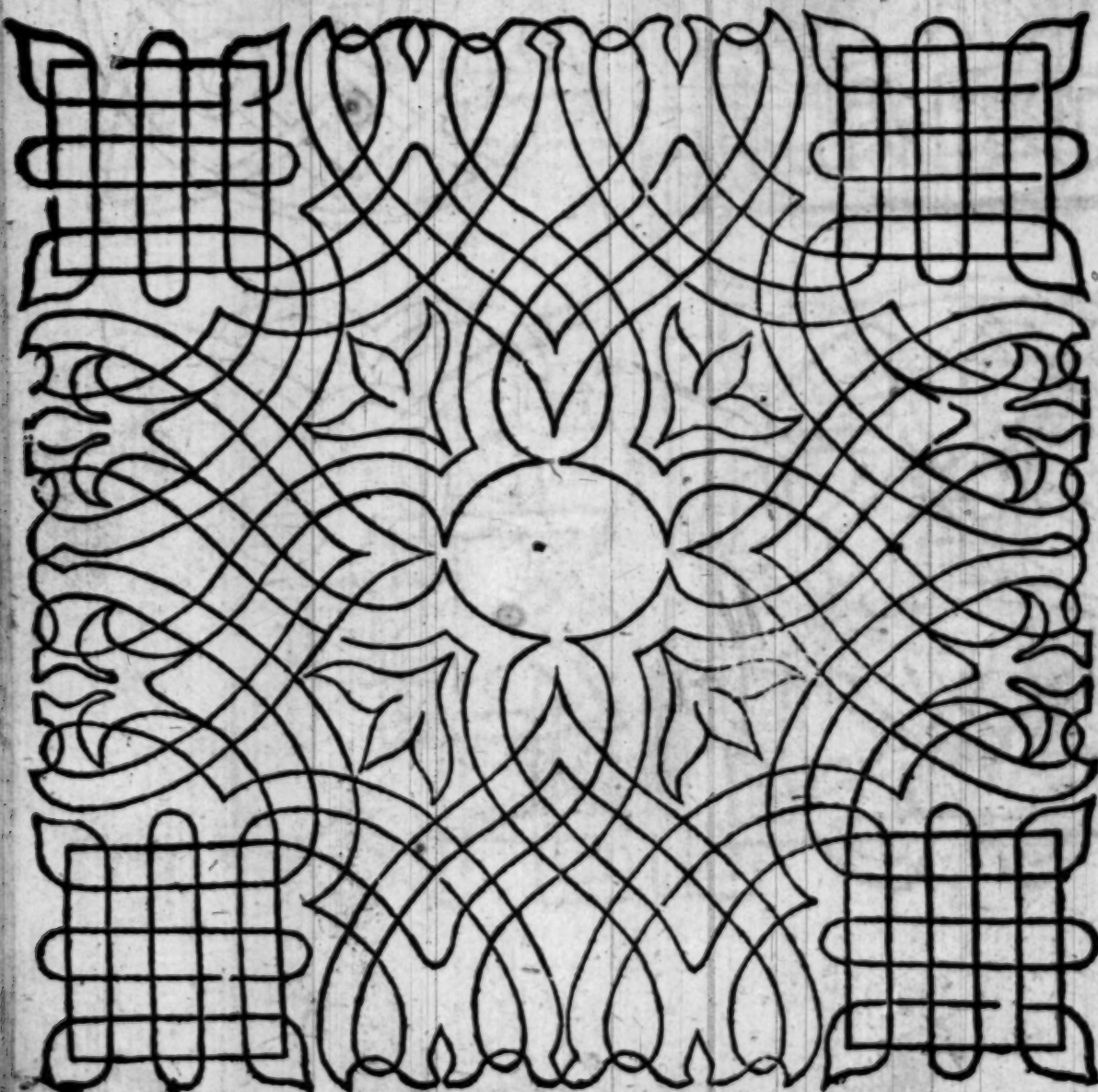
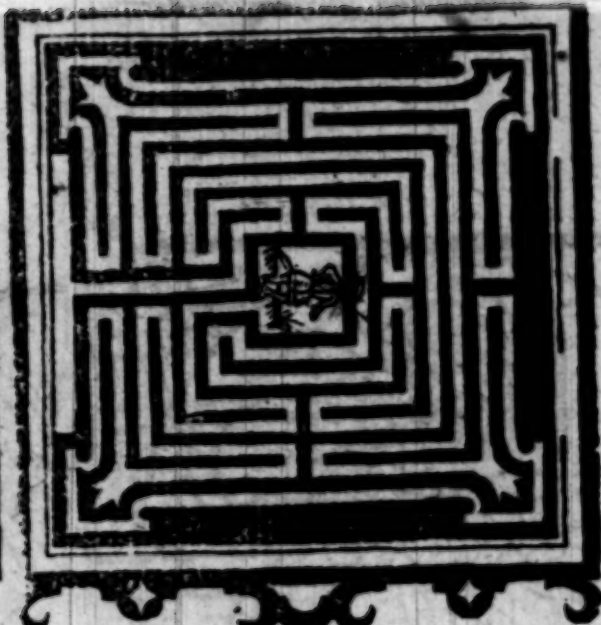
A proper knot to be cast in the quarter of a Garden, or otherwise, as there is sufficient roome.



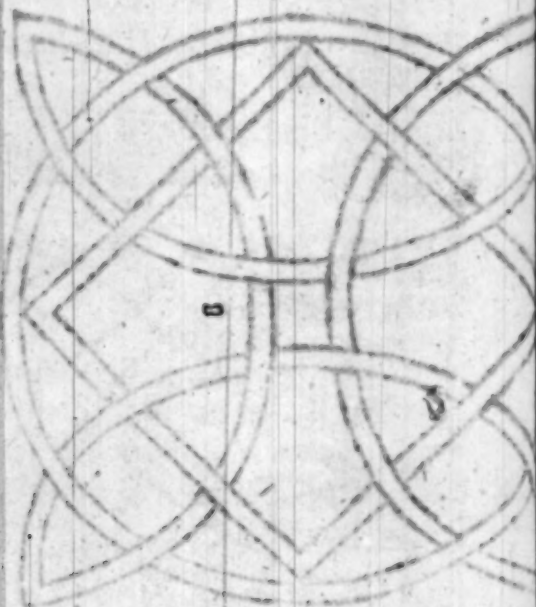




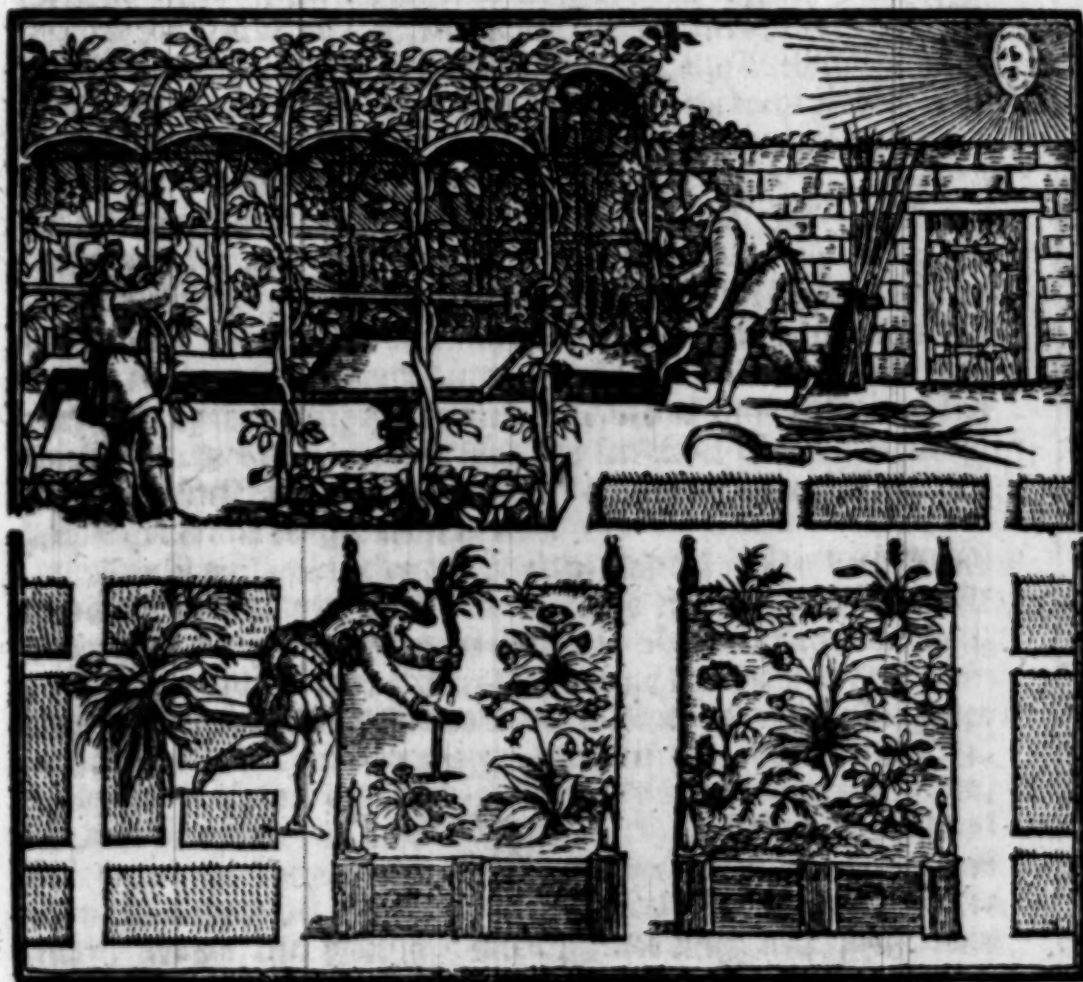




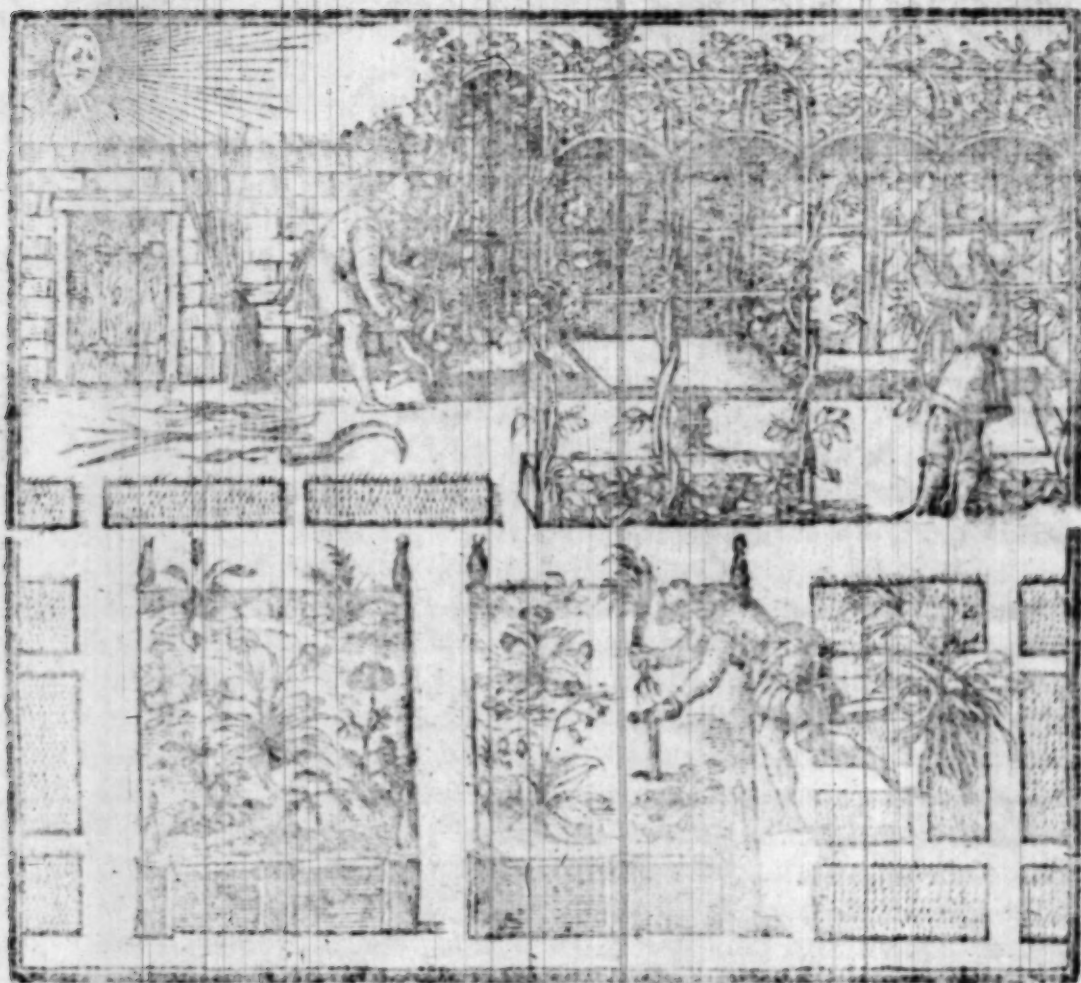




THE SECOND PART OF THE
Gardeners Labyrinth , vttering such skilfull experi-
ences and worthie secretes, about the particular sowing and re-
moouing of the most Kitchin Hearbes, with the wittie ordering
of other daintie Hearbes , delectable Floures , pleasant Fruites,
and fine Roots, as the like hath not heretofore been vttered
of anie. Besides the Phisicke benefits of each Hearbe
annexed , with the commoditie of waters
distilled out of them , right ne-
cessarie to be known.



THE SECOND PART OF THE
 Gardeners Labyrinth, vnting such skillfull exper-
 iences and worthie lectures, about the particular sowing and re-
 moouing of the most Kitchen Herbes, with the wiske ordering
 of other dainty Herbes, delectable Flowers, pleasant Fruits,
 and fine Rootes, as the like hath not heretofore been vntred
 of arie. Besides the Phisicke benefits of each Herbe
 annexed, with the commodities of waters
 distilled out of them, might be
 helpe to be known.



The second part of the Gardeners Labyrinth.

†



Here in my first part I haue fully satisfied (as I
trust) the expectation of the husbandly Garde-
ner & owner in all such matters, which may ap-
peare needefull or requisite to bee learned and
knowen, for the better aide, in possessing of a
commodious & delectable Garden: in like man-
ner I purpose to aide the carfull husbandman or
Gardener, after the possibilitie of my skill in this

second part with such skilful helps and secrets, as are required about
the artly sowing, & particular bestowing as well of the Kitchen, as o-
ther vaintie hearbes, pleasant fruits, delectable flowers, and fine rootes,
which at large I purpose to utter in the same, and likewise the whi-
sche benefits to each hearbe I adde, with other matters profitable, to
the ende the owner or Gardener may with better good wil be incited
to bestow an earnest care and diligence about the often remouing, as
well of vaintie flowers as hearbes, with the clipping, pressing downe,
breaking away, and cutting off the ends of roots, that these may grow
the thicker and bigger both in herbe and roote. All which instructions
and rare secrets, are part borrowed out of the woorthie booke and
treasures of the Greeke and Latin professors of husbandrie, and part
purchased by friendship and earnest suite, of the skilful obseruers and
wittie searchers in our time of laudable secrets in Garden matters,
seruing as well for the vse and singular comfort of mans life, as to a
proper gaine and delight of the minde.

The like of which already uttered, may the owner both see and
knowe by that plante, which in Gardens euerie where, as well
those in the Countrey, as in the Citie, is placed none so common,
none moze plentifull, nor oftener vled among Kitchen hearbes, than
this familiar pot hearbe, named the Colewozt, which by a diligence
of the husbandly Gardener, may wel serue in the coldest of Winter,
in the steade of other pot hearbes, so that this hearbe by good reason,
knowen to be not onlie profitable for the pot, but for the vles of whi-
sche righte necessarie, hath moued mee the rather to beginne first
with the Colewozte. in uttering what care and diligence is re-
quired aboute the sowing, often remouing, clipping, and

uppl

L 2

dressing

dyessing of the same, beeing also bestowed in Beddes woorkemanly prepared.

What helpes and secretes is to be learned in the sowing and
often remouing of the Colewort.

Chapter. 1.

The woorthie Marcus Cato in his husbandry preferred the Colewort before all other pot hearbs, & the learned Plinie in like manner ascribed a principallitie to y^e same of all Garden hearbs, for which cause, I purpose here to intreat first of this hearbe, that manie of the Latines also for the mightie Gemme and armes like braunches named the Colewort. Such is the nature of this plant, that the same refuseth no condition of ayre, for which cause it may be committed to the earth in any time of the yeare. This plant belireth a fat earth, & wel turned in with dung, but the Clepie, grauelly, or Sandie this refuseth, except a flood of raine water shal now and then helpe.

The Colewort prospereth the better, beeing placed toward the South, but this standing open to the North, not so well encrease, although both in tast and strength it overcommeth in the same place, for through the colde aire and frosts, the hearbe is caused the tenderer and pleasanter.

The Colewort togeth on a hil side, or the ground keeping downe, it delighteth in dung, and encrease by the often weeding, as the woorthie Rutilius hath noted: when six leaues shal be sprung vp, or but five, the same then must be remoued, but in such maner handled, that the roote afore the setting againe, be annointed with soft Cow dung, which ought so to be ordered in a warme day, if it be Winter, but if in the Sommer time, then at such time as the Sunne shal be going downe in the West.

The most antient of the Grekes deuised the Colewort into three kinds only, as the crisped, which they named Selinoides, for y^e similitude of y^e leaues of Parsly, the same of them Leas, for y^e broad leaues issuing or growing forth of the Gemme, for which cause, some named it Cauloden. And the same which properly is named Crambe, growing vp with thinner leaues, both single, and berie thick. The Colewort becometh the bigger, through the earth daily turned

light

light

light

light about the bodie. And particularly to write, the common Colewoytes, which they name the long or greene, ought to be sowne from the middle of August, or from the beginning of September, that these may bee growne vp into bigge leanes to serue in Winter and in the lent time. The husbandly Gardener or owner may plant young Colewoytes in October, and set them againe in December, to possesse the leanes in the sharpe Winter, and the seedes in June and July, and to make them also grow as bigge toust, as in the other seasons of the yeare, and as tender or rather tenderer, although not so delectable: and haue good regarde, that the seedes be not too colde, for these then bring forth plants out of kinde, of which the report goeth, that seedes sowne become Kapes, or Rattews. Such seeds as you would to endure for five yeares, ought to be carefully preserved. Marcus Varro willety the Colewoyte to be sowne in saltie places, and when thzee leanes be come vp, to sift Ayter or salt earth on them, so syne as the frost falling, so on such wise, handled, these are caused the tenderer and delectabler the vertue notwithstanding preserved, which like practise is confirmed, in the Greeke husbandrie of Praxamus. There be some which vse ashes in stead of Ayter, or for the same cause, that either may kill and destroy the Canker wormes, which greatly offend and wast the Colewoytes in some gardens.

The Anguler Columella reporteth that the Colewoyt both come sooner soft and tender in seething, and both keepe the greene colour without Ayter, if the roote lapped with thzee small blades of the sea weede, be againe set in the earth.

The woorthy Plinie willety the Keyte or sea weede, to be put vnder the Ashe, in setting againe, & vnto the same end, the delicate and tender setting bled, so that the Colewoyt before the seething, be steeped a time in Oyle and salt, but in the seething, put in a litle salt, for the Pitoyous and saltie substance consisting in it.

The Colewoyte may be caused both bigge and pleasant, if thrust into a hole, you set it vnto the leanes in earth, that no part of the stammes be left bare, for doubt of perishing: and as the same groweth vp in height, and the earth springing from it, so continually raise the earth high vp to the bodie, and cut away the outwarde leanes, so that no more then the top of the leanes may appeare aboue the earth. The Colewoyt often weeded about, and workemanly danged war-

eth the stronger, and causeth the Colewozt to be of a greater increas, and tender of lease. All the yeare through, may the Colewozte be cut, seeing all the yeare (as aforesaid) the same may be sowne, yet growne to seed, it ought not to be cut. The tender tops of the young Colewozte, is greatly comended for Sallets, so that somewhat hote, both oyle and salt bee bestowed vpon. When raine after a drought in sommer time falleth, the owner may renew those Colewozts decay- ing, by plucking away from them the decayed leaues, which either shall be drie or eaten in many places through. The Cabedge Cole or white Cabedge, may be sowne thicke in beds, but after certaine leaues come vp, remoued into well dressed beddes, halfe a yeard asunder, growne especially to a bigge stemme or stocke, and these well byn- der a cold ayre in that they are caused the tenderer and delectabler through sharpe frosts, and the heades couered with straw, are caused both rounder and whiter.

The wrinkled, crisped, and Romane Cabedges, which of nature are more tender and delicate, ought to bee sowne in the moneth of March, and remoued at certaine times of the yeare, being alwaies watered, when need requireth.

When the Gardener or owner at any time seeth that the leaues of the Colewozte either withereth or waxeth yealow, the same then is a note of the default of water, which like happening, causeth the leaues to be yealow and full of holes or lythie and feeble, or els drie, through which of necessitie they must feeble and die.

If the husbandman or owner would haue Colewoztes tender and pleasant (as aforesaid) let him breake off in the setting againe the outward leaues, for the inward leaues in the growing, will after be- come better of taske, and pleasanter in saueur, then the outward leaues were.

The redde Colewoztes naturally grow through the abundance of hote dung, or through the watering or well moistening of them with the Lyes of wine, or els by the planting of them in hote places, where the sunne dayly shineth a long time together.

Neuer take the tops of the Romane, crisped, nor the other, for your turne and use, but alwaies the thicke leaues downwarde, from the head or tops.

All the sortes or kinds of Colewozts may be planted at all seasons.

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

7

So that the stipes and earth be neither too cold, nor too hote. When you mind to set them againe in holes made with a Dybbel, cut away the ends of the rootes least in the setting into the earth, they fold or bend to the ground, which harne them greatly, and onely those of a bigge growth are to be set again, which although they slowly take root, yet are they caused the stronger. And the rootes of these, neither desire any soft dung, nor richer manure to be annointed or laid about them, or to be set in a soft earth, in that they soy and prosper, in a ground meanly dyge, although the outward leaues wither, vntil y time a sweet raine falling, recover their strength. Some water the younger Colewortes with salt water, to cause them grow tender. &c. as afoze vttered.

Phile (that incomparable searcher of the matter of nature) reporteth, that pots or other vessels, in which by water dayly seething, a crust or parget, so fast cleaveth or is baked to the sides within, that the same with no scouring can be gotten off, yet by seething the Colewort in this pot the crust immediatly and with ease falleth off.

Athenæus writeth, that the Coleworste ought not in any case to be planted or sowne neare to the Vine, nor the Vine in like manner nigh to it, for such is the great enmitie betwene these two plants (as Theophrastus testifieth) that being both in one plot together, these so hinder one another, that the Vine in branches growing further rather turneth or bendeth backe againe, from the Colewort, then stretching toward it, and it yeldeth lesse fruite there through. And the same to be true (Plinie affirmeth) the wine in the Butte or Hogget-head to be corrupted, both in the colour and taste, though the Colewort be put into it, but the wine againe to be restored, though the Bete scraped in it. By which argument or prose, Androcles singular in knowledge (as the like Plinie writeth) reported, that the Coleworste greatly auaileth against drunkennesse. Of which, it is now a common exercise among the Egyptians, that greatly lone wine, to boile the Colewort with their meates, that in eating of the like prepared, they may avoid the annoyance of wine after drinke. Praxamus (a Craike wiser of husbandrie) reporteth, that if any poureth a litle quantitie of wine by drops, into the licour of the Colewort boyling, the same after seetheth no more, but quailed in strength, is corrupted & changed in licour. By a like manner may contrary gather, y the person which would drinke plenty of wine

wyne, without being overcome with the same, ought to eate afore a quantitie of the raw Colewort with meat. But for this matter, heare the sentences of the singular man (M. Cato) who willethe the person purposed to drinke much wine at a feast, and to dine or suppe freely, to eate afore supper, as great a quantitie of the rawe Coleworste as he will, with good vineger, and being also set downe to supper, to eate five leaues raw, these then will cause him to be, as one that hath neither eaten nor drunke, whereby he may drinke as much as he will, through the marueplous repugnancie of the hearbe with wine, as afore vttered, and like noted by Agrius, in the worthe worke of M. Varro.

The Coleworste in like manner, ought not to be planted nigh to the Duganie, Mug, nor Solmes bread, for the drying quality consisting in them, so that these either sowne or planted nigh to the Colewort, and other very moist hearbes, be generally hinder, and cause them to wither. A like matter worketh the Lauander, set in beds neare to moist hearbes, through the heate consisting in it, as the it with doth, which through the proper tartenesse or sharpnesse being in it, burneth any moist and tender plant growing nigh to the same.

This also is worthe remembrance, which Athenzus reporteth, that in Athens (in time past) the Coleworste was wont to be prepared with meate for women with childe, in steade of a certaine defensatiue against annoyances.

There is also made of the Ashes of Coleworste, infused in water, a salt, in that the same possesseth a styronous substance (as afore vttered) through whose benefit, if this be meanely boyled, and taken in broth (as we shall hereafter write) doth loose the bellie.

The Physicke help and worthe secrets of the Coleworste.

The Colewort in the vse of physick, hath so many properties, that peculiar Pamphiletes the ancient, as Pythagoras, M. Cato, Chrissippus, Diocles, & sundrie others, wrote of the vertues of the same. But of the monuments of these men none are extant, saving the same which M. Cato, & Plinie, haue left to many more writers. Wherefore a few vertues of this hearbe (of the wortheiest) shal after be vttered.

Full

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

9

First M. Cato writeth, that this hearbe coleth and moystneth in the second degree, and for the hardnesse of making water, which cometh south by dropses or verie straightly, hee willethe to prepare the hearbe after this manner, in taking the Colewozte leaues cleane picked, and after the bestowing of them in scalding water, to lette them seeke a while, which as yet halfe rawe, poure the lycoure almost from them: to these then adde a reasonable quantitie, both of Oyle and Salt, but of Cummine a litle, which done, let the whole seeke a while, then taking it from the fire, and coled, to sup a mease or draught of the broth, and the Colewozt leaues to eate, as sone as they be thus sodden tenderer, which in like maner daily vse, vnto the time the patient be eased.

For all manner of blcers, and swellings, vse and apply the Colewozt woorkmanly bzused, especially the smal stalks and tender leaues of the same, that the Græks name Crambe, and with vs, the common Colewozt, which like ordered, purgeth the Canker sores, and in short time healeth them, the like of which, no other medicine properlie can doe. But before the patient lay them on, he must diligently with much warme water, soule and washe the sores, after apply or lay on twice a day the said Crambe or common Colewozt bzused: with which remedie also, both loose ioynts and bzuses, yea Canker sores and blcers in the Pappes of women, may maruellously be cured.

If the vicer be so tender, that it cannot suffer the sharp working of the Colewozt, then mixing the Barlie meale with it, applie on such wise and the report goeth, that there is one simple, which like preuaileth against the ioint sicknesse or Ache of ioints, as the raw Colewozt diligently applied, doth, if the same finely shzed, be eate with Rue and the Coxlander, or else with a Cozne or two of salt and Barlie meale, artly mixed with Oximel, the same be noynted morning & evening.

That if a person hardly beateth or but litle bzuse (saith M. Cato) the Colewozt with wine, which after the harde working forth, and warmed in a saucer, drop gently into the Ear, and in short time the patient shall feele the benefite of the same. These hitherto M. Cato, which accustomed to proue the crisped Colewozt especially, next the thin with great leaues and big stalks.

Leauing further to write of the vertues, which Cato in his husbandry, and the singular Plinie utter, I here minde to declare certain
 wo2thie

woorthie practises of the Grækes, as touching the Colewort, and first they report, that the decoction of the Colewort drunke with pleasant wine, to procure the monthly course in women, to these, the iuice of the same mixed diligently with fine honey, to cure the eyes, if the same wittily be dropped into the corners of them.

What if any hath eaten venemous Mushromes, he shall marvellously be holpen, by drinking the iuice of the Colewort.

For they omit that the same doth yelde a mightie nourishment to the bodie, in such maner, that children eating of the Colewort for a time, do the speedier goe alone.

The iuice (as they reporte) drunke with white wine, for xl. daies together, cureth both the disease of the Spleene and Jaundise, as the woorthie Paxamus (in his husbandly instructions) confirmeth. In which he reporteth, that three parts of the Colewort, with two partes of the rounde Alame steeped in vineger, clenseth the foule scurfe and leaprie, the same boyled and drunke amendeth the voice and griefe of the Arteries. For which cause manie studentes, vse desirously this hearbe.

To vse also the seed and leaues, with Sylphium and vineger brewed, and applied on the greued place, doth perfittlie cure the byt, both of a Dog mad and not mad.

And if it shall happen through a distillation of Humme from the head, that the Vuula or rouse to be fallen into the throte, the iuice then of the rawe Colewort applied to the head, wil in short time recouer, and staie the same in the proper place, a secret in berie deede, woorthie to be noted.

The rawe iuice of the Coleworthe drunke with wine, helpeth the bit of a Serpent or Adder, the iuice with the meale of Fenigreke and Vineger artly mixed, & either annointed or applied in plaister forme, doth effectuously cure the Gout, Joynt sicknesses, yea filthie and old blcers, as the woorthie Dioscorides writeth. The iuice also snuffed or drawn vp into the nozethilles, purgeth verie well the head, and conueyed into the secret place with the meale of darnell, draweth the redde or termes downe.

The iuice of the leaues annointed alone, or with Barlie meale beaten and mixed, doth in short time qualifie inflammations, and aswaage great swellings, and with salt both breaketh Botches, and
 stalet.

staleth the theading of haire.

The diseased of the Splene, this rawe eaten with Vineger doth profite, after the boyling mixed with Hony the same greatly preuayleth against eating blcers, and Canker sores.

The greene stalkes with the rootes burned (or rather roasted vnder hot timbers) which after the Artly mixing with old Barrows grease, be in plaister or soyme applied, to the daily griefes of the flankes or sides, doth in short time preuaile.

The iuice of the Colewozte mixed with the Oyle of Roses, and applied to the sozehead, doth remoue the headache, procured by heats of the Sun. To this Colewozt boyled, if you mire the Oyle of Almonds, and iuice of the sweet Rhome Granate, the same vled, doth in short time deliner a drye cough.

The Colewozt (after the opinion of certaine skillful Physitions) is founde to be hard in digestion, swelleth the Bellie, harmeth the stegmaticke (in that the same increaseth humors) and harmeth women, hauing the rebde cours on them, sozomuch as the same increaseth such a fluxe.

If you would dyle a moist bellie, then after the Colewozts be halfe sodden (by pouring forth al the first in a maner) poure in other warme water spardely, which like boile againe, vntill the Colewozte in this seething, shal be tender and soft, and in eating, season it with a little pepper and salt: but this may not bee handled on suche wise, if you would vse it for losing of the bellie, soz then after the shifting of it out of the first hot licour, into a pan standing fast by with Oyle and a little salt prepared, you must boyle againe vnto the time the same be ready.



The commended benefites of the distilled water
of Colewortes.

The leanes of the greene and common Colewort, are to be distilled in a faire and apte time, about the beginning of June.

This water ministred or receiued vnto the quantitie of thre ounces at a time, morning and evening, staeth womens redde.

The distilled water of the Colewort, profiteth the birth of child, when the time of deliuerie is at hand, if a Napkin wet in it be applied often to the nose, to smel vnto, for by that meanes may shee happely be deliuered. The like quantitie drunk, helpeth the dropping of the vrine: And drunk vnto the quantitie of thre ounces, at a time, morning and evening, staeth a loose Bellie.

The Phisicke helpes of the water of the
redde Colewort.

The leanes of the redde Colewort gathered, are to bee distilled in the ende of May.

This water drunke in the morning fasting, vnto the quantitie of five or seuen ounces at a time, softneth a hard belly, and thre ounces at a time bled (for a moneth together) putteth away the gibbinesse of the head: this water profiteth against the Apoplexie, and conuulsion or Crampe in the members, either drunke or annointed on the greued places. This water helpeth the trembling and quivering of members, if those be often rubbed and supplied with it, and the water suffered to drie these into partes by it selfe.

The

The linnen clothes wet in if applyed on inflammations, putteth away the heate, and ceaseth or swageth the swelling: and orderly drunke, healeth vlcers, both within and without the bodie, so that the vlcers without, be applyed with linnen clothes, both morning and evening.

What worthe instructions to be conceined, in the sowing and ordering of the Beete for the Pot.

Chap. 2.

The Beete more often eaten at poore mens tables, ought to bee bestowed in a moist fat earth, and sowne at any season, but rather the seedes to be committed to the earth about the middle of December, and vnto March, and like in August, to possesse seedes, which may indure for three yeares. The seeds ought rather to be thick then thin sowne in bedde, and shot vp to some growth, as that foure or fve leaues be sprung about the earth, then in summer time, the plants are to be remoued, if the beddes afoze were moistned or wet with shoures, as the singular Columella writeth: but if the ground be drie in haruest time, then to remoue them where shoures lately fell and softned the earth.

The Beete loveth or loveth to be often digged about, and to be fed with much dung, for which cause the young plants to bee set againe, ought after the endes of the rootes cut off, and the tops of the leaues clipped, to be striked or annointed about with new Cow dung, and then bestowed in beddes a good distance asunder, which after the plants be more growne vp, to be diligently weeded about, and the vnprofitable weedes throwne away, for by that meanes they grow the fairer and bigger, being as I said bestowed in fat earth and well dunged.

The Beete may be caused to grow bigge and brode as Sostion in his Greeke instructions of husbandrie affirmeth: if befoze the Beete shall be growne vp into a stemme, and shot forth in stalkes, the owner lay vpon the head a broad Tile, Potsharde, or some other thing of waight, to presse the top gently downe, for by that practise or meanes in the waightie bearing downe, the Beete is caused to spreade into a breadth with the leaues.

The Beete becommeth the whiter and far greater, if the husbandly Gardener annoint or couer the roote with netwe Dre. or Cowe dung.

ding, and that he cut the roote and top of the young Beete, as the Leeke handled befoze the setting, and after a bigger growth to presse it downe as afoze vttered. To haue the Beete grow redde, water the plant with redde wine Lyes, or set the same in a hote place, where the sunne dayly shineth long. The Beete rosted in Imbers, taketh away the stinking smell and saour of Garlike eaten, if the same bee eaten vpon or after the Garlike, as the Greeke Menander hath noted. This is maruellous to heare by the seede of the Beete, that it yeeldeth not the whole perfection or perfit seedes in the first yeare, but an increase in seedes somewhat moze the second yeare, and in the third yeare a full perfection, from the first sowing: And Plinie reporteth, that the Beete speedier commeth forward with the old seed, then with new: for which cause, the matter demaunded of a skilfull Gardener, reported of experience, that the seedes of the Beet to sow, ought not to be gathered, befoze the Beete had bozne a third yeare, after the first sowing of which seedes sowne in one time of the yere, the best Beetes come, and this not to be forgotten, that when the stalk of wine, through the Colewort (as afoze vttered) is corrupted in the vessel, the same againe by the saour of the Beete, as through the leaues put into it, is recovered, These hether to of the Beete.

The Phisicke benefits of the Beete.

First all the kindes of the Beete, haue a colde and moist qualitie, and the white Beete as Diphilus the husbandly Whistion reporteth, looseth the bellie, and the red Beete moueth or prouoketh vyne. Galen affirmeth this Beete to be endued with a nyctrous qualitie, through which it both purgeth and clenseth filth, which vertue is moze effectuous in the white, insomuch that it causeth the bellie laxative, and purgeth the bodie of euil humours, yet the same passed to the stomacke, byteth and plucketh it. The iuice of the common Beet drunke, looseth the bellie, but the same harmeth the stomacke, in pinching or byting it, especially those persons which haue a tender and delicate stomacke, so that the hearbe is better commended sodden, then the raw iuice bled.

The iuice of the Beet mixed with the oyle of bitter Almonds, after the heating of it in a sawcer, supped or drawne vp into the nozethrils, doth greatly helpe the stopping of y nose, & recouer smelling, through the

the purging or cleansing of the head. The roote of the Beete boyled in water, and three or foure drops of the licour dropped into the eares, doth remove the rage and paine of them. And the iuice of the Beete rubbed on the gummes, doth asswage the raging of them, the iuice of the raw Beete, Annointed on any balde place of the head, procureth the heare to grow, and killeth life. The decoction of the leaues and rootes, do also cleanse the head of Pittes and Dandrie. The Beete after the tender boiling, applyed on welkes, & blisters of scalding or burning, doth in short time heale them. The iuice of the Beet, drunke with Cumine or Dyll seedes, remoneth the grypings of the billic. The blacke or rebbe Beete boyled with the pulle Lentiles, and the same receiued, stayeth a loose bellie, which (as I aboue said) the white Beete looseth. This white Beete also sodden and eaten with raw Garlike, doth driue away the wormes of the bellie. The Beete boyled, helpeth the obstructions or stoppings of the Liner, more then the great Gallowes or holly Wke doth, especially when the same is eaten with Mustard or Winegre, and eaten in like maner as with Mustard or Winegre, doth maruellously asswage and helpe the corrupted splene. This hearbe is rather eaten after this maner, for Physicke causes, then for nourishment, in that there is but a small nourishment of this, as of all other Pot-herbes, which to the full eaten of at a time, or often eaten, doth not onely gripe and bite the stomacke, but encreaseth euil humors, as well in the healthfull, as sicke persons.

The speciall effectes of the distilled water of the white Beetes.

The time of the destilling of this hearbe, is in the end of June, and that both the leaues and stalkes together. The new water of the white Beet, drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantity of foure ounces at a time, doth marueylously preuaile against the Stone, in that the same consumeth it. This quantitie like drunke, preuaileth against the grieve of the stone, in that it purgeth the Loines and Kidneyes. This ceaseth the vexing paine, of ioynt aches, by applying wet clothes on the places, dipped in it.

What

What rare helpes and secretes to be learned, in the sowing
and setting of the Blete.
Chap. 3.

There is two kindes of this Blete as the white, and the redde or blacke, both at this day verie well knowne, though their growing as common in the field as garden. The stalkes and leaues of the red ware so red in the growing, that they appeare as dyed with a scarlet colour, but after a further growth, in time, these from that colour are chaunged into a purple, and at length ware blacke to the eye, of which the same also is named of some the blacke Blete. The roote besides of this hearbe in the breaking, appeareth so red as anis blond.

The white Blete possesseth or rather sendeth forth branches and leaues like to the Bete, and the same without sharpenesse or biting, being vnlanerie, and eche is of the same condition, that it speedely springeth in the garden, as Plinie reporteth.

And the white or red Blete may be sowne in any earth, but rather in a well dressed ground, in the moneth of March, as the skilful Neapolitane Rutilius willet, which strongly growne in the earth, or fully come by, continueth and yearely reneweth of it selfe, without any proper sowing, so that in time this so taketh roote by the seedes yearely falling, that the Gardener after can hardly weede the same out of his ground, if he would: wherefore this once sowne in a fertile earth, prospereth many yeares by the peerelely peeld and falling of the seedes, and requireth neither raking nor weeding about it, as the worthy Palladius reporteth.

The Phisicke helpes and commodities of the Blete.

The worthy Galen in his booke De faculta. simpl. writeth that the Blete is a Pot-herbe, much and often eaten of the simple sorte, and in qualitie cold and moist.

This as Plinie writeth, is thought to be vnprofitable to the stomacke, & so much molesting the belly, that in some this moneth & causeth the Choller to increase, & the fire of the bellie. Yea this moneth also vomitings, with griping of the bellie, through choller moued and stirred

stirred vp, which by the daily or too much eating of it at a time procureth, yet the Blete of practise knowen, doeth lesse harme the stomacke and bellie, if the first water powred sooth, and the soft herbe put into a Panne, bee fried with Oyle or Butter, and a litle Salt added, or Vinegre, and so eaten. But this notwithstanding may not bee often eaten, nor to the full at a time, so much as this (of experience knowen) procureth vomiting, and engendreth paine in the stomacke, griping in the bowels, and to be laxative, through the moving of Choller. And in the eating also this is to bee remembered, that the hearbe be not eaten with Oyle alone, and a litle Salte, but rather with Vinegre added for the more part, in that the same otherwise is knowen to be enemies to the stomack. This hearbe (as aboue vttered) hath a propertie in softning the bellie, especially when the force of it is encreased, by some other slipperie and clammy matter. These hitherto Galen. This notwithstanding drunke in Wine (as Plinie reporteth) preuaileth against the bite of a Scorpion, & laid in plaister soyme, on the thick skin of the face, and in like maner, for the beating paine of the temples, and with Oyle on the Spite, doeth greatly profite. And the worthy Hipocrates writeth, that the same eaten in the maner (as afoze taught) both restrain or stalle the termes. These hitherto Plinie.

What diligence and skill is required in the sowing and setting of the Garden Arage,
Chapter. 4.

The Garden Arage for the Potte, ought by the agreement of the skillful, to bee sown in the moneth of March and Aprill, & in the other monethes following, vnto Harvest, the apt seasons and times herein considered. But in some places are the Seedes bestowed in the moneth of December, in a well dressed and dunged Earth, and the plants better prosper, being thinne sown. These also may be sown by themselves in beddes, and together with other hearbs, and they alwaies desire to be cut or broke off with an iron instrument, that they cease not yielding forth of yong. The Arache loveth in the often watering, if the season and ground be very drie. The Seedes of the Arage ought diligently to be couered, incōtinent after they are bestowed in the Earth, and the rootes of the hearbes to be often digged vnder, and

left

left hollowe of Earthe, that the rootes may growe within the stronger.

This hearbe is supposed to grow the greater, being not remoued at all, and so; that cause the plants thin bestowed in beddes, doe euermore ioy and encrease the better. The plant in like maner encreaseth and becometh the sooner great, through the often and diligent weeding exercised about the same. To be brief, this plant after the mind of Rutilius requireth to be watered all the hote and drie seasons, vnto the time of Haruest, in that the same delighteth and encreaseth the faster, through the daily moisture bestowed on it.

The Phisicke benefites of the Orache.

The seedes of this hearbe may be kept to vse for foure yeares, and these through their densing qualitie, helpe greatly the stopping of the liuer, raising the spreading of the Gaul, or yelow jaundise. Two drammes of the seeds brused, ministred with two ounces of Honey, and a draught of warme water, and drunke fasting, doeth on such wise by vomiting, cast vp Choller. The herbe in qualitie is knowen to be colde in the first degree, and moyst in the second, through which reason it softneth the bellie. The herbe smallie nourisheth, in that the liconr or iuce of it is waterie and slipperie, through which it lightly looseth the bellie, & the leaues after the brusing laid in plaister soyme on hote impostumes & swellings, and like on the Shingles, doe both speedely coole & heale them. The seedes after the brusing, taken with a quantitie of honey, and the same sundry times, helpeth such as fetch the winde hardly. The seedes like vied, doe expel the Melozimes in the bellie, and prouoke vomiting. Pythagoras greatly misliked the Orach, in that the same (as he affirmed) caused by the often eating both a palenesse of face, & the kings euil. But the worthy Dioscorides far other wise iudged, in that hee affirmed the Arache seedes to helpe the jaundise. The Arache also helpeth such, as haue a hote Liner. If the hearbe Mercurie with the Orach be diligently boiled, and the brouth sundry times vied, it doth both loose the belly, and deliuereth the paine of the bladder. The person daily vsing the decoction or brouth of the Orach, with the herbe Mercurie and Beets, for a time together, doth speedily deliuer and rid the Ageu. The Orach eaten, is thought profitable

fitable for the person spitting blood. The herbe brysed and applied to the bellie, not onely clenseth the defaultes or corrupt matter within the priue place, but ceaseth in short time the painefull griepe of the Matrice. The Dyache brysed and laid in plaister forme on any member hurt either with thorne or nayle, doeth with expedition dya the same forth, and healeth it. The hearbe boiled with hony, and applied on rough nailes of the fingers, doeth within short time loose them off. The Dyache brysed, and after the miring with hony, applied in plaister forme, doeth in short time remooue the arching paine of the hote Gout in the feete. The hearbe so tender and soft boyled, as any other hot hearbe, and eaten of the patient, doeth not onely soften the bellie, hardned or collicke by heat, but remoueth diuers swellings.

What singular skill and secrets is to be knowen in the sowing, remoouing, and setting againe of the woorthie Hearbe named Sperage. Chapter. 5.

The felds and garden Sperage, togeth in a fat, moist, and wel dyessed Earth, and the hearbe growen vp to heighth, hath by euerie lease growing forth, a rebbe berie hanging downe, in which a seede is, that the hearbe in the sowing commeth of.

The seedes to be committed to the earth as the woorthie Didimus in his Greke instructions of husbandry reporteth, ought to be bestowed in the sowing time, into litle holes of thre fingers deepe, in which the owner or Gardener may put two or thre seedes together, well halfe a fote distant one from the other, which thus bestowed, require after no more travell nor care for the first yeare, saving the digging about, and plucking vp of weeds growing among them.

But for the sowing and increase of the Sperages, it shall be to great purpose and commoditie, to heare the wittie preceptes and instructions of Marcus Cato, Columella, Plinie, and Palladius lyke agreeing.

The seedes (say they) as much as thre fingers can take vpp at one tyme, maye the owner or Gardener workemanly put, and and lightly couer, in Earthe both fatte and dunged, and in berie litle furrowes, so straight made as a lyne, which on this wise handled, will by the fortieth day after growe so inwarde in the Earth, that the rootes shot forth, wil clasp e sold one in another, as if they ioyned

together in one, and for the same named of the auncient Gardeners
 Earth Sponges. If the places in whiche you purpose to committe
 the Seedes shall be drie, then these laide in soft dung, lying alove
 in the furrowes, shal on such wise bee ordered and couered, as if
 they laye or were bestowen in little Pyues. But in a contrarie ma-
 ner shal the owner or Gardener worke and doe, in continual moist
 places, for the Seedes in like places shal bee bestowed on high rid-
 ges, workemanly raysed with dung that the moisture may lesse
 annoy the plantes in the growing, which only ought to be fedde or
 watered with the moisture passing by, and not still to abide in that
 moisture, to bee cloyed with it. The Seedes on such wise bestow-
 ed, wil yelde a Sperage in the firste yere, whiche the owner or
 Gardener shal then breake, or cutte off beneath. But if the owner
 assay to pull at it nere the ground, the small rootes (as yet tender)
 and weake in the Earth, may happen to rise and followe with the
 whole Sponge, which therefore workemanly broken off, ought thus
 to bee fedde and nourished in one proper place, growing still for two
 yeres with dung, and diligent weeding. In the other yeres follow-
 ing, the Sperage shal not be broke off by the stalk, but plucked up by
 the roote, that the same may so open the eyes of his bystanding, for ex-
 cept the plant be handled on such wise, the stemmes broken off, will
 not encrease the eyes of the sponges, but rather grow as blind, so that
 these wil not after suffer the Sperage to yeld or send forth the proper
 increase. The same shal the Gardener preserve, of which he gathered
 the seed, & burne after the crops & knobbed endes or wights of the same
 herbe. After this, about the winter time, shal the owner lay or bestow
 on the sponges, both ashes & dung, which the learned M. Cato rather
 willeth to be Sheeps dung. There is another maner and way of sow-
 ing by Sponges onely, which after two yeres ought to be remoued
 into a sunny & wel dunged place. The like furrowes ought to be made
 well a fote distant one from the other, and not aboute twelve fingers
 deepe, in which the tender & young sponges are so to be set, that lightly
 couered with Earth, they may easily spring and shote up. But in the
 Spring time, before they shal come up or appeare aboue the ground, the
 Gardener or owner with a forked iron, commonly named a dibbel shal
 so loose the earth, that the end of it may appeere out, & the roote of the herbe
 loosed from the ground, may by the meanes increase to a moxe bignesse.

The

The same M. Caro willetth the plant to be raked and diligently weeded about, but so handled in the digging about or weeding, that the rootes of the plant be not losed, or in the weeding by it be other, wise feebled in the treading done.

In the winter time, the litle groue of Sperages shall be covered ouer with thin and light Mattresses of straw, least it should be bitten and greatly endamaged, with the frostes and cold ayre, which in the spring time shall be opened and vncouered againe, and fedde with dung about the roots, that the plants may the speedier come to ward and increase, thzough the comfortable feeding of the dung and moisture, orderly done.

The worthy Didimus (in his Greeke instructions of husbandry) reporteth, and after him the learned Plinie that many Sperages do spring vp thzough the hoznes of wilde Rams broken into grosse powder, and these strowed along in litle furrowes, and after the light couering with earth, often watered, which although it seemed not credible to the worthy Dioscorides, and that he much misliked the reason of the same, yet if the Gardener or owner shall make a pzoofe or tryall, he will after confesse (I dare affirme) this experiment to be most true.

There be which saye maruellouster repozte, euen that the whole hoznes of Rammes, not broken a sunder, nor cut into small peeces, but onely boared thzough in many places, and then bestowed in the earth, to bring forth or yeelde in short time Sperages, which if the owner would possesse of them for all the yeare to feede on, when hee gathereth the fruite, must then in the digging about (as the saide Didimus writeth) open those rootes, which scatter and spread in the toppe of the Wyxe, for the young plant thus ordered, will speedely send forth new tender stemmes, and yeeld Sperages, which lightly boyled in water and fatte broth, and to the same both salt and oyle or sweets butter orderly mixed, and a litle quantitie of vinegar poured vpon, will after yeelde a singular delight to the eaters thereof.

But in this place I thinke it necessarie to be remembred, that the Sperages require a small boyling, for too much or long boyled, they become corrupt or without delight in the eating.

Of which the worthy Emperour Drusus, willing to demonstrate

the speedie successe of a matter, was wont to say, the same should be sooner done, then the sperage boyled.

As touching the making of the sauce or pickle, the tender stalkes sprinkled with salt, and wrought vp in round heapes, ought so to be let alone to sweate in the shadow, after to be diligently washed with the owne licour, until they be sufficiently abated, and cleared of the moisture in them, at the least, clenched from the pickle, and in the laying on of a weight (after such maner) pressed forth. When poure into an apt vessell two partes of vineger, and one of the pickle, which wo:kemanly thicken with hye Fennell seedes, in such maner as the tender stalkes and leaues, may well be pressed downe and conered in the same, and that the licour reach vp vnto the top or brimme of the earthen pot.

The Phisicke commodities and helps of the Sperage.

The fruite and seede are vsed in medicine, and indure for a yeare in perfit vertue, the hearbe by nature heateth and moisteneth, & so the same refozmeth and helpeth the palsie, the Kinges euil; and strangurie. The garden Sperage prepared with meat and eaten, both not onely helpe a hard milt, but stopping of the Liver. The roote of the Sperage boyled in wine, and ministred in apt time of the Moone, reconereth the shedding of the Gaule, and the same is by experience knowne. The meate of the Sperage, is reported to be most profitable for the stomache, which with Cummyne mixed, both remoneth the swelling of the bellie, and chollicke.

The meate of the Sperage orderly prepared, and eaten, both not onely procure vrine easily to passe, but dissolueth, and sendeth forth the small stones in the bladder, through the iuice of the Lemon added to, which experience will well confirme. There be some which minister the roote (artely boyled with sweete or white wine) for griefes of the womans priuie place. There be which affirme, that the person shall not be stinged with Bees, if he annoint the naked parts with Sperage and oyle bruised together. The decoction of the roote, not only profiteth the persons hardly making water, but aswageth all maner of grieve and paine of the gummies, teeth, and mouth, by holding the same for a time and washing the mouth therewith.

The

The worthe Plinie writeth, that the Sperages workemanly boyled, do maruellously profit and helpe the griefes both of the breast and Chyne of the back. To these, the Sperage to procure and moue forward the venerall act, and to lose gently the bellie.

Dioscorides reporteth, that the Sperages either roasted or sodden, do mitigate the dropping paine of the byrne, the difficultnesse of the same, and the perillous fire Disenteria. Galen affirmeth, the sperage to cleare the kidneyes and stopping of the Liver, especially with the roote and seedes.

What skill and obseruation to be followed, in the sowing, and ordering
of the Spynage. Chap. 6.

This plant aptest for the Lent time (for that the same is oftner or more common vsed in that season) may in any ground bee bestowed, for it cometh vp very wel in euery place. And y^e seedes are to be committed to the earth in the monethes of September & October to serue for the Lent inseason for that it is the first pot-bearbe which is found in gardens about the Lent time. But in the monethes of December, Januarie, Februarie & March, for al the sommer following. And this plant very wel indureth the extremitie of times & seasons, as y^e colde, frosts, & snow. And although Spynage cometh well vp in any ground, yet the earth ought to be diligently labored before, & the same to be somewhat moist. The plants after the coming vp, which appeare by the seventh day after the sowing, need no weeding to be done about them, but only to clip off the tops of the tender leaues, wherby they may grow vp the comlier & fairer to the eye. If the gardener would haue the bed of Spynage indure a long time, & to profit, he ought to cut halfe the bed along at one time, & the other halfe at an other time. This pot-bearbe (after the tops cut off & throwne away) ought to be sodden without water, in that the same (in the seething) yeeldeth much moisture, for contented with the licoure, it reinfeth any other broth added, so that this otherwise sodden, loseth the kindly and natural iuice of the same, and besides too hastily drowned or overcome with the same. This being very tender after the seething ought to be finely chopped with a wodde knife, or otherwise stamped and turned often in the beating of it, which wrought vp into round heaps, & fryed in the sweetest oile or butter, must so be prepared with a quantitie of beruice & pepper brused, that it may the more delight the tast.

The

The Phisicke benefits and helpes of the Spynedge.

This hearbe for the pot, named Spynedge, moysteneth and cooleth (after the mind of the skilfull) in the end of the first degree. The Spynedge both softneth the bellie, and moistneth the bodie, and remoneth the grieve of the brest and Lungen. This gathereth winde in the bodie unlesse the excrementall humour be sent forth by purge: but applyed in hote causes this greatly profiteth.

And if we may credite the Whisition Serapion, this moze nourisheth then the Arage, looseth the bellie, and leaueth after it a bitter nourishment, yea clenseth, mundifieth, aswageth cholles, and profiteth both the brest and lunges. The hearbe boyled and applyed, helpeth the sozenesse and grieve of the throte, proceeding of bloud, and the rebbe cholles. The dayly eating of this hearbe, both marvellously profit such hauing a hoarse voice, and that hardly fetch breath, and much molested with the cough, if the hearbe after the proper seafing and ordering (as aboue taught) bee eyther fryed with sweete butter, or the oyle of sweete Almonds, and that to it Meriulces and Pepper brused, be wittily added. For on such wise handled, the same (dayly eaten) both expel humours, where in a contrarie manner, the decoction and hearbe simply being dayly eaten, both (by agreement of the skilfull) ingender in condition Melancholie, as the dayly eating of Lettuce doth. The hearbe prepared (as afoze taught) and eaten with the decoction of the same drunke, doth not helpe without doubt the grienous paines, and ache of the backe, but looseth a collicke bellie.

VVhat skill and diligence is required, in the sowing and ordering of the Garden Sorrel.

Chap. 7.

The Sorrell of the Garden, although it will well enough come by in ground not dressed, yet the seedes ether moze bestowed in laboured earth, not dunged at all, in the moneth of Aprill, and to be much and often watered, untill they be well come, in that the same especially togeth being placed neare to water.

And the Gardener minding to possesse the seedes of the Sorrel, ought

ought, after certaine leaues come vp, to remoue the plants, in letting them grow, vnto the full ripenes of the seeds, which after the thorough drying, to be kept vnto the sowing time. The Sorrel come vp, neither well abideth frostes, colde, nor ouermuch moysture, and to haue the beds of Sorrell continue seemely to the eye, all the sommer through, let the owner or Gardener cut the tops of the Sorrell, three or foure times in the yeare.

The like diligence may be imployed, in the sowing and ordering of the Garden Pimpernel.

The Phisick commodities and helpes of the Sorrell
and Pimpernell.

The hearbe Sorrel cooleth and drieth in the third degree, and the hearbe eaten, remoueth lothsomenesse, and procureth an appetite to meat. The Sorrel sauced with Vineger, and eaten fasting in the morning, is a preseruatiue for the Plague. The leaues wrapp'd in paper, and rosted vnder hotte imbers, which after the drying and mixing with a litle Oyle of Roses, applied on swellings, doeth bring them in short time to mattering.

The seeds of the Sorrel bruised, and druncke either with water or wine, allwageth the dangerous Flire Dissenteria, and the paine of the bellie of a continuall Flire, and the adoyement of the stomacke.

The rootes of Sorrel boyled with Vinegre, or rawe imployed and annointed, do heale the Lepre and Kingwormes, and rough nayles, but it becometh to rubbe ouer the places afoze, with salte Syter and vinegre in the hot Summer. A decoction of the rootes ceaseth the itch of the bodie, if with the same the bodie in a bath be gently rubbed and suppled, the roote besides boyled in wine allwageth both the griefe or paine of the eares and teeth. Warte in remouing of the kinges euill, weare the roote about their neck. The iuice of the Sorrel, tempered with oile Olive, and rubbed on the head, remoueth the grievous pain of the head proceeding of an intemperate hotnesse. The rootes boiled with wine and drunk or eaten, remoue any sickness coming of heat, as the Jaundise, proceeding of the Liver or Spylt, in the like manner druncke, and the rootes after the drying applied in plaister forme to

the priuie place, do stay the reds of women long continuing. The seedes boyled in wine, do stay all maner of fluxes of the bellie, and remoue the swelling of the milt. The leaues of Sorrel well brused, and applied on the wecast, do asswage the burning of the feuer.

The Pimpernel of the Garden, heateth and drieth in the seconde degree. The hearbe is especially applied for poison, in that the same clenseth al the outward filth of the body. The roote boiled in wine, and drunk, remoueth the euil and venemous blood from the hart, of which the plague is easily caused to procede, and ceaseth the headache. If a man be wounded vnto the skull, the iuice of this hearbe dropped into the wound, and applied vpon, doeth in short tyme recover and heale the same without grief. This dropped into blcers and other wounds, cureth them. As for psoe take a Cocke, and strike him into the skull with a knife, but not pearcing it, after take the iuice of this hearbe, and instil two or three drops into the wound, and it wil immediatly bring the same vnto a skar. The hearbe mixed with Rocket seed and vineger, and drunke, moueth sweate, expelleth poyson and euil humours: boyled with wine and drunke, remoueth the disease of the hips, and especially helpeth an euil cough, and purgeth the brest. The hearbe boyled in wine and receiued, breaketh the stone of the kidneys and bladder, & remoueth the strangurie. In the same maner imployed, profiteth against the gripings of the bowels. But this especially auailleth against the stopping of the Liver and Milt. The Pimpernel, to be briefe, helpeth the stone, moueth vrine, asswageth the strangurie, purgeth the brest, and expelleth the poyson of the plague from the heart. The iuice of it boyled, and drunk befoze the fit of the Ague, putteth away any feuer. The roote may also be candied, as the Ginger, with Sugar or Hony, and to preuaile the like against the abovesaid diseases.

The hearbe boyled, remoueth a continuall Ague: the iuice of the hearbe, a tertian Ague, so that the same be drunke befoze the fit.

A worthy experiment against the Phthisicke of the Lungs. Take of the Pimpernel brought into very fine powder two ounces, of new Pimpernel water, and of Sugar, as much as shall suffice, making thereof an Electuarie, of which take daily two dragmes.

The commended helps of the distilled waters, both of the
Sorrel, and Pimpernel.

The sorrel is to bee distilled, with the whole substance, in the
spring time. The water tempered with Triacle, prevaileth
against the plague. The water drinke, remoueth all maner of
inward heates, ceaseth thirst, helpeth the Liner and Spilt, by
the drinke and imploing of the same, with linnen cloathes wet in
it. It remoueth the shingles being applied and drunk, it helpeth scald-
ing or burning, and putteth away the kings evil. It availeth in Ag-
gues, to coole the burning heat, &c.

The roote and herbe with the whole substance, shzed and brused to-
gether, ought to be distilled in y^e end of May. The water of the Pim-
pernel drinke morning and evening, vnto the quantitie of thre or
foure ounces at a time, doeth helpe the stone of the kidneys and blad-
der, and purge the Reines. This helpeth the plague, drinke within
fve daies once. It profiteth women, whose Matrice is ever colde, and
sendeth betwene the redde. This drunk, with a litle quantitie of Ca-
stoy in fine powder, putteth away the shaking of the members. This
drinke vnto the quantitie of foure ounces fasting, preserveth the per-
son that day from any natural sicknesse, in that it remoneth al ma-
ner of grieve from the heart: expelleth evil humours, and procureth
urine. This drinke, like profiteth against poyson, it causeth also a
cleare skin and faire both in face and handes, if the partie for a time
washe daily those parts with it.

What skill and diligence is required, in the workmanly sowing
and ordering of the Borage and Buglosse.
Chapter. 6.

The Borage, and Buglosse or Longdebaste serving for the pot,
when the leaves are yet tender, and their floures for salletes,
require to be sown in the moneth of August, and in Septem-
ber, to serue the winter time, and in the moneth of April (the
ground increasing) for the Sommer time, in that the seedes (espe-
cially of the buglosse) prosper not so wel, to be sown at any other
time, for so much as it togeth to be placed in a warme and sunny
place,

place, the earth afoze diligently laboured and dressed. These may the owner or Gardener remoue (after certaine leaues sprung vp) at anie time of the yeare, and to be placed in beddes, either alone, or in Bordes, round about the new beds of other hearbes. The seedes both of the Borage and Buglosse, require to bee gathered in a manner halfe ripe, to the ende they fall not out of their huske. And the whole hearbe with the seedes of either ought to be laide in some high place, open to the warme Sunne, that they may ripen the speedier, which full ripe, rub tenderly between the handes the seedes forth on a linnen cloth or sheete, and these may you keep for two yeeres.

The Phisicke benefites and singular helps both of the Borage and Buglosse or Longdebeefe.

The Borage, which otherwise of Galen and Dioscorides, is named the Buglosse or Longdebeefe, is (by the agreement of the skillfull) affirmed to be moiste and hote in the first degree, which the selfe same Galen witnesseth, saying, that the Buglosse is of a moiste and temperate hotenes, for which cause, steeped in wine, it is thought to procure a gladnesse and ioy to the drinker of it.

The Borage boyled in wine, and the same drunke, procureth good blood in the creature. The iuice of this hearbe mixed with Artike with Sugar, and drunke fasting, maruellously helpeth the goodnesse or swimming of the heade. The Sirupe made of the iuice of Borage, to which a like weight of Sugar, and a litle quantitie of the powder of the bones of the Harts, these after the workemansly boiling, drunke fasting for a time together, maruellously recovereth the trembling and beating of the heart. If the iuice with the simple Sirupe of borage and Decene equally mixed, shalbe drunke morning and evening, doeth not only increase memorie, but remoue Melancholie. The flowers rawe eaten with distilled Vineger and Sugar, doe not only procure good blood, but stay the trembling of the heart, which like they in wine, and drunke, preuaile. The flowers dried and preserved for a yeare, doe like profite in all the abovesaid griefes, as the hearbe doeth. The sirupe of borage used for a time, preuaileth against the Kings euil.

The flowers steeped for a time in the Oile of sweet Almonds, and after

after the bringing forth of this tenderly applyed to the stomacke, and region of the heart, do marvellouslie comfort the weake patient. Syrupes both of the Bozage and Buglosse, are applyed in Whisicke, for the onely purpose of comfortyng.

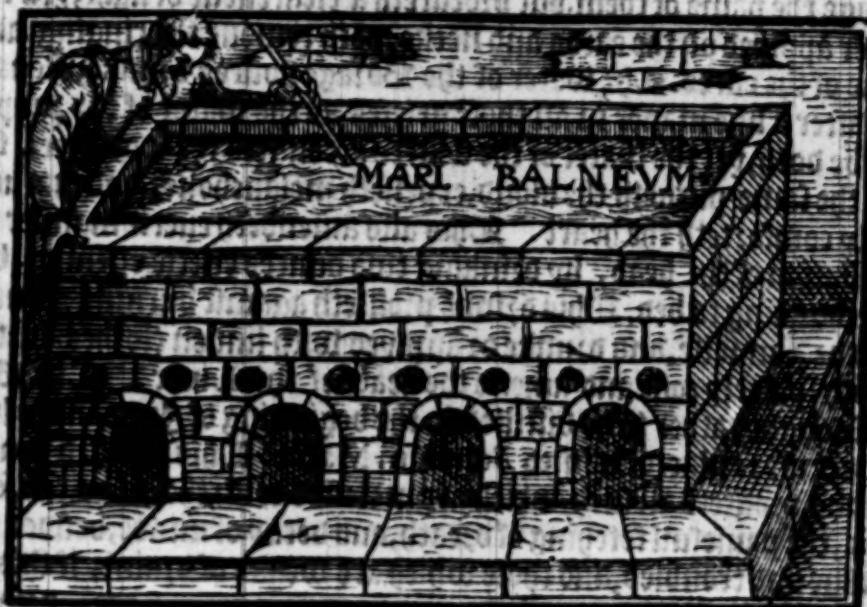
To such having weake Lungs, and a drye cough, the Buglosse steeped in wine and drunke, greatly pzenaileth: for the roughnesse of the throte and cough, onely apply or drinke (as Galen instructeth) the Buglosse boyled in Husle, or water and Hony. The Buglosse steeped in wine, and tempered with Pellicrate, procureth after the drynking gladsonnesse to the creature. It purgeth the redde choller, proceeding of the onermuch heate, being often drunke with sweete wine. This drunke in the like maner, recouereth the Cardiacke passion, yea it expelleth the noysom humors of the Lungs.

The iuce of the Buglosse, rembourth the swelling of the feete, being drunke with warme water.

The wine for a time drunke, in which the Buglosse shall be steeped, doth pferue a good memento.

The same wine of the flowers steeped and drunke for a time, not onely comforteth greatly the heart, but engendzeth good blond in the creature.

The figure of the fornace named Balneum Maria.



The singuler helps and Phisicke benefits of the distilled waters,
both of the Borage and Buglosse.

The commended time for distilling of the Borage, is for the more part, about the end of the moneth of May, when as it beareth floure, which wholly with the root, shzed and bzused, ought then to be distilled in such a like furnace and vessel, as here before is placed, named of the worthie Distillations Balneū Mariæ, for that the same more naturally distilleth all manner of delectable floures and comfortable hearbes, then any other dye forname by ashes doth.

The water distilled in this forname, drunke vnto the quantitie of two or thre ounces at a time, both morning & euening, doth maruelously remoue and asswage, both the grying and swelling of the bellie, yea this cureth Dissenteria, and the hardnesse of fetching breath.

This water drunke fasting vnto the quantitie of two ounces, doth not only comfort the heart & braine, but rendereth a helpe to memorie and wit, yea purgeth the euil blond, and recouereth phrensinesse.

This water easeth the grieve and paine, caused by the sting and benoming of a spider or Bée, by laying linnen clothes wet in it on the place. This with the red Sarcenet laid on the eyes, doth not onely asswage the paine of them, but procureth a clearenesse of sight, yea the water applyed on the eares and necke, doth remoue the ringing and paine of the eares. The water of the Borage floures drunke, prenateth after a like maner in all those griefes, as the water of the proper hearbe doth, yet the water of the floures accounted the worthier, for that the same purgeth the blond, expelleth melancholie, and maruelously comforteth the heart. This also amendeth euerie manner of distillation of the head, by drinking two ounces euerie euening, before the going to bed. This drinke profiteth against burning Feuers and the Jaundise, and drunke or applyed with linnen clothes wet in it, doth speedely cole and amend the heate of the Liver. The Buglosse ought rather to be distilled in the beginning of June, in the like forname afoze placed, named Balneum Mariæ. This distilled water drunke, profiteth all such, which are molested with the flire, Dissenteria, the painefull fetching of breath, and decay of minde, besides the pensue and troubled, and those which are weake of braine, if this be drunke

Drinke morning and evening with Suger, unto the quantitie of two or three ounces at a time. This drinke preuaileth against al hote sicknesses, agewes, defaults of the Lungen, the Liver and Spleen: it purgeth also the blood, and remoueth the pricking about the heart and breast.

The water of the hearbe drinke, amendeth the Handise, clenseth the Leprie and scabbes, and stayeth the stinking of the head. This ceaseth the paine of the head, and burning of the eyes, applyed with linnen clothes on the head or eyes, this in like manner handled, remoueth the ringing or sound of the eares. The Englosse floures, and hearbe, of each two great handfuls, to which added of Sinamon foure ounces, a little brused before, these together distilled in Balneo Maria do yelde a most precious water, for the comforting of the heart and braine, if the same in the dayly taking, be drinke with the confection of Manus Christi, made in tables with pearles.

What skill and secretes to be learned, in the sowing, remouing and setting, of the Maigold. Chap. 9.

THe Parigold named of the Barbarians Calendula, is so properly tearmed, for that in euerie Calends, and in each moneth this reneweth of the same accord, and is found to beare floure, as well in winter as sommer, for which cause, the Italians name the same the floure of euery moneth: but some tearme it the sunnes floure, or the solower of the sunne, and is of some named the husbandmans Wyall, in that the same sheweth to them, both the morning and evening tide. Other name it the sunnes Bride, and sunnes hearbe, in that the floures of the same follow the sunne, as from the rising by the South, unto the West, and by a notable turning obeying to the sunne, in such manner, that what part of heauen bee possesseth, they into the same turned beholde, and that in a cloude and thicke aire like directed, as if they shoulde bee reuiued, quickned, and moued, with the spirite of him. Such is the loue of it knowne to be, toward that royall Starre, being in the night time, for the desire of him, as pensive and sadde, they bee shut or closed together, but at the noone time of the day fully spred abroad, as if they with spred armes longed, or diligentlie attended, to embrace their Bridegrooms. This Parigold is a singuler kinde of

of hearbe, so lvn, in gardens, as well fo; the potts, as fo; the decking of garlandes, bewtifying of shogayes, and to bee woyme in the bosome.

The seedes of this floure, are commonly bestowed in a husbandlie and well dressed earth, but this rather done by the counsel of the skilfull in the increase of the spone, whereby the floures may grow the bigger and broader. But to procure the floures to grow the doubler, bigger, and broader, the owner ought to remoue the plants often, and to sette them in new beddes, lying in sunnis places, herein considering at those times of remouing, that the spone be increasing so high as you can.

Wesides some will, that many seedes be put together into one hole, in the first quarter of the spone, and to be sundrie times watered, in the first comming vp of them, unlesse the moisture of the aire other wise helpe.

These after certaine leaues sprung vp, if they bee often remoued and clipped by due course of the spone, yeelde a better, broader, and a fairer floure, and they yeelde alwaies moze floures in the haruest, then in the spring time.

The Phisicke benefits and helpes of the Marigolde.

The iuice of the hearbe and roote applyed vp in glister forme, recouereth in short time the palse members. The floures and leaues dyed, keepe vnto vs, fo; if a woman deliuered of childe, the after burden come not, kinde o; burne this hearbe and floures dyed with ware, and with the same make a smoke below, fo; this is a sure and laudable experiment, to bring them downe (the childe asoze deliuered) as the learned Brunsfelsius reporteth. Fo; the paps of women swelled, through the stopping and stay of the redde, minister the floures with Spicknard and Wine, in that the same ceaseth o; alwageth, and prouoketh the monethly course.

The floures of the Margold boyled and drunke, stayeth the fluxe of pissing blood.

The iuice of the leaues winged forth and dropped into the eares, killeth the woymes.

The rindes of the rootes dyed, brought into powder, & applyed on
fole

oule puffes, do heale them in short time.

The rinde of the Parigold pierceth and digesteth euil humours, which boyled in Wine and drunke, helpeth the stopping and other griefes of the Liver.

The floures of the Parigold sieped in Vinegre and Salt, and reserved, retaine their proper vertue for two yeares.

These comfort the stomach and procure an appetite to meate, yea they consume the humours of the stomach, and heat a cold breast.

The said iuice of the floures mixed with a little pure vinegre warmed, and rubbed wel on the teeth and gummes, is a soueraine remedie for the asswaging of the grieuous paine of the teeth.

The iuice of the floures drunke vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, in the fit of the Plague, shal speedily be holpen, if the patient (after the drinking of the iuice) lying on bed, be wel couered with clothes, to sweat thoroughly. The conserue of the floures is a preparation against the plague. If seven graines waight of the iuice of the floures be drunke with three ounces of white Wine, and repeated sundry moynings, it helpeth the quartaine.

The powder of the rindes of the rotes of the Parigold, mixed with the iuice of Fennel, Wine, and a litle Oyle, and boyled vnto a thicknesse, to which a litle waxe added for the apter making of it an ointment, and so applied on the Spilt or cold stomach, doth greatlie profite.

The commended helps of the distilled water.

The worthy Hieronymus a most expert Herbarian reporteth, that the distilled water of the Parigolde floures, drawn in Balneo Mariae, do recover all defaultes of the eyes, whether these proceed of heat, or through colde caused, and to procure cleare eyes, besides the putting away of all griefs of the head.

What skill, industrie and secretes is to bee learned, in the
sowing and ordering of the Parsely.
Chapter. 10.

The Parsely in the bestowing in the Earth, requireth small labour and diligence, and loueth a stony and Sandy Earth, so
that

that the same needeth small fatning, whereby it may well agree to be sown in shadowie places, nere to the hedge or herbeur in the Garden, and this especially requireth much watering, for the speedier shooting vp: The olde Seedes, if we may credite Theophrastus, doe sooner come vp, yea and the elder Seedes are better for the turne: the Plantes shotte vp doe endure a long time without sowing anie more, in such condition, that the owner or Gardener shal not neede to sowe or set of the plantes againe, for fife yeares after. The Parsley when it hath growen a yeare, it sendeth vp or beareth stalkes and Seedes, and a yealowishe floure. The new Seedes of the Parsley committed to the Earthe, doe mooste slowlie come vp in beddes, in that these not before the fortieth, yea fiftith and sixtith day after the sowing, doe for the moze part appear, as the learned Plinie reporteth, yet this ease and commoditie ensueth, that once sown and come vp (as aboue vttered) it yearly encreaseeth of the own accord, without renewing for many yeares. The Seedes as the worthy Neapolitane Rutilius witnesseth, toy in anie earth, & as well in the cold as warme places, sowing the Seeds in the first comming vp, require much moisture, through which watering, they come so speedely strong, that after no ayre nor ground hindereth them. Both the Seedes and plants (as Columella instructeth) may prosperously be bestowed, to increase the speedier, nere to Springs, and litle running waters. If the owner or Gardener would haue the leanes grow verie broade, then let him attend to the words of the worthy Greeke Florentinus, who willethe to take vp of Parsley Seedes at one time, as much as can handsomely be holden between three of the fingers, and these after the tying vp in a thin or well worne linnen cloath, to bee set into a shallowe hole with dung, handsomly mixed in the Earthe, which on such wise handled, wil after come vp and grow, with so large a leafe, for the increase of all the Seedes wil then be ioyned, & shotte vp together in one blade, as the worthy Rutilius hath noted, and before him the singular Columella. But the Parsley shal grow biggest, (as the worthy Florentinus reporteth) if the owner by digging about the rootes, bestowe chaffe about them, and after the couering with light earth, do water them wel and often. The Parsley may the Gardener cause to growe crisped in leafe, if he thrust and bestow the Seedes a litle before the sowing in a ball stuffed with them, which broken somewhat with a stasse,

stasse, and as they were spoiled, commit them (as Columella wil-
leth) to the Earth.

¶ The Gardener otherwise with lesser pain may procure them to
grow crisped, in what manner soever they be solwen, if he turne on the
bed and plants a round stone, or big roller, as soone as the plants bee
somewhat growen vp above the earth: and the like may the owner
doe with the plants come vp, if he tread them often downe.

The best commended time, for committing of the Seedes to the
earth, is from the midst of May, vnto the Sommer solstice in Iune,
in beds thicke together, and to be often watered, for that these speedier
encrease and come forward, through the heate in the same season. If
the owner or Gardener would haue the Seedes sooner breake and
shoot vp, let him infuse the seeds for a certain time in vinegre, which
bestowing in a well laboured earth, fill halfe the beddes with Ashes
of the Beane coddies. After the Seedes are thus solwen, water them
often and lightly with a small quantitie of the best Aqua vitæ, and
soone after the sprinkling and moistning of the beds, couer the beds
ouer with some piece of wollen cloth, to the ende the proper heate mi-
nistred, bea the not away, for by that meanes, the plants within one
houre will begin to appeare, so that the owner must then take off the
cloth, and sprinkle or moisten the plants appeared oftentimes, wher-
by they may the sooner shoote vp into a high stemme or blade, to the
wonder of y^e beholders. To Florētinus, do Iunius Columella, Plinie,
& Rurilius agree, that there are two kinds of the Parsly, as the Male
and Female, the Male (as they describe it) hath blacker leaues, & sho-
ter roote: but the Female possesseth crisped leaues, and hard, a big
stemme, in tall soure & hot: but neither of these two doth Dionisius &
Chrisippus y^e phisitiō, allow to be eaten with meat, as Pliny writeth.
Although the same much vled in Plinies time, as at this day, both in
broths & sauces, for a better delight & appetite. They report y^e by the
often eating of the Female blades, worms engender in the body, and
y^e the female eaten, doth procure the woman baren, as y^e male y^e man.
And further, y^e Parsly eaten of women with child, doth cause y^e births
to haue the falling sicknes, yet they affirm the male to haue lesse, so
y^e for the same it was not altogether misliked nor condemned of y^e an-
tient, among the wicked fruits. Wherefore it is not to be marvelled at,
if y^e late phisitiōs do aduise & warn persons, hauing y^e falling sicknes,

and women with child, not to eat the Parsly: To these, the Greeks forbad Pourles, and women with childe the eating of Parsellie with meate, although an other occasion may also ensue of the same, that it may hinder womens milke Springs, and extinguishe the comming of milk, besides that, this procureth the enters of it, vnto the venereal act.

Certaine report, that the sick fishes in Ponds, are mightily recovered and made lustie, through the Parsely laide in them.

There is nothing that doth like sweeten the mouth, as the fresh and greene Parsly eaten, so that the hearbe often eaten of them whiche haue an vnfauerie or stinking breath, & sendeth forth an odious smell to be abhorred, doth in short time maruellously recover and amende the same: A matter verie commendable and necessarie, both for maydens and widows, to deceiue their loowers, by the chawing & bearing about of the greene and fresh blades, whereby they may so remove for the present the strong smell of the breath, yauoning or other wise issuing forth, and by the custumable eating, send forth a sweeter breath.

Sundre in times past, preserved the blades of Parsly in a pickell, vnto vse, which receiued or contained two parts of Vinegre, and a third part of Wine.

The Phisick benefits and helps of the Parsellie.

The Garden Parsly is hote in the beginning of the third degree, and dry in the second, or it heateth & dryeth by nature in the second & third degree. The iuice of Parsly, Turpentine, Beate Beale, & the Oyle of Roses, artly mixed & boiled together with a litle quantitie of Sarcocolla, of which by art, an absteriue or cheser made, doth most perfectly cleanse & incarnate the blisters of Carbuncles, & other impostumes. The Parsly boiled with leaues of the Colewort and Helilote, of which a plaister made with Omeale, Oyle of Camomile, Will, and Oyle of Roses, and applied, doth maruellously resolue the impostumes of the pappes, caused through the ranchling of milke staied backe, part by drying vp the milke, and part by purging the same.

The Parsly eaten either rawe or sodden, doth amend the stopping of the Viner, prouoke Urine, stablish loosenes of the bellie, and hath a propriety in strengthening of loose parts.

The Parsely also hath the nature of pearcing, for which cause it moueth

moveth Wyne, and very much prevaileth against the stone, as well the seede, as roote.

The Greeke Florentinus writeth in his husbandrie, that the Parsely with crums of bread, applyed in the stead of a plaister, doth heale the Shingles, but the decoction of the same drunke, to breake the stone, and the like to performe by applying outwardly.

To these, for such hardly making water and diseased in the kidneyes to helpe aswell by the lease, as by the roote.

The blacks spots to restore to the proper colour, if the decoction of the seedes be applyed upon, and to soften the hardnes of the paps, by applying the leaves brused on them.

Plinie writeth, that the brused seedes annoynted with the white of an Egge, or the seede boyled in water and drunke, to amend and helpe the kidneyes, and brused in colde water, to profit and remoue the vicers of the mouth, this also with olde wine minisfred, to breake the stone in the bladder, which like doth the roote performe.

This profiteth given for the Jaundise in white wine, and to such women whose monethly courses doe not orderly proceede, or bee stayed.

This is worthy to be noted, that the raw Parsely yeeldeth sweeter waters in the drinking, as the worthy Plinie hath noted, and to the mouth (as Galen writeth) the same pleasant and verie delectable to the stomacke.

The seede taken in meate, doth expell wind in the bodie, the same brused and applyed on a soule scabbe, doth very wel cleanse, and procureth a faire skinne.

The seedes eaten, doth remoue the swelling of the stomacke, and profiteth the dropse men, in that the seedes are drye and pearce euil humors, and consume them.

The Parsely profiteth those persons, which haue gotten the Leprie of Pleumaticke humors. It cleanseth the Liver, and remoueth the paines of the Loines and Bladder.

A sauce prepared of the Parsely, with Sozrell and Vineger mixed together, and eaten, prevaileth against the burning of a Fener.

If after the drying of the Parsely rootes, and beaten finely to powder

pouder the same, be mixed and drinke with the purest wine; both not onely procure a sound braine, and perfit memorie, but purgeth the bloud.

The seedes (after the agreement of the best writers) are principall in the causes of Whisicke, the rootes next to them, and the leaues as third in working.

The rootes, hearbe and seedes of the Parsely, applyed in meat and drinke, do procure vrine, remove the stone of the Loines drawe downe the reeves, dissolve winde in the bodie, take away the griping of the bellie, assuage the strangurie, paine of the backe, grieve of the kidneyes and bladder, and swelling of the stomacke.

The person bitten of a mad dog, by boyling and drinking the decoction of Parsely, and applying a plaister made of the seedes and hearbe shall be speedely holpen.

The Phisicke helps of the distilled water of Parsely.

The commended time of the distilling of Parsely is in the beginning of September, and that the fresh rootes and hearbe, with the whole substance be distilled together in Balneo Mariz.

The water of the Parsely drunke vnto the quantitie of three or foure ounces at a time, morning and euening, for thirtie or fortie dayes together, profiteth against the stone of the kidneys and Loines, purgeth the kidnes and bladder, and greatly moueth forwarde the vrine.

The water drunke in the same maner, helpeth digestion, procureth an appetite to meate, purgeth the Luer, easeth the strangurie, and wherefoener this water is annointed on the head or bodie, haire do soone after theade.

VVhat

What skill and diligence required in the sowing and ordering both of the
Garden and wilderunning tyme.
Chap. 11.

The garden tyme, although it seeme better to agree, to bee placed nigh to Bees-hives (for the commoditie of honey) then in gardens, yet our purpose is here, somewhat to write of the same, in that this is so carefully bestowed in gardens, as well for the commoditie of meates, as for the decking of garlands. There are founde to bee two kindes of it, the one white with a wooddie or hard roote, growing on litle hills, which is accounted the worst.

The other as wel in kind, as floure black, which Arius (in meates) disalloweth, for the same inwardly receyved lightly putrificth, and increaseth cholericke humors.

The tyme of the garden growing bushie, and full of slips, is scene to shote up two handfuls high, being most sweete and delectable of savour, and decked with a number of small leaves, bearing also purple floures, tending to a whitenesse, and the tops after the forme of Antes bending in bodie. The garden tyme better cometh forward, being bestowed in a leane & stony ground: for which cause, it neither desireth a fat nor dunged earth, but loveth to be placed in a sunnie and open place. This wel inough prospereth, being bestowed in beds, either in the seeds or plant, but this speedier cometh forward being onely set, yea this increaseth, being set againe with the floures bearing, as the singuler Theophrastus witnesseth. The owners of hives have a perfit foresight and knowledge, what the increase or yeelde of honey will be every yeare, by the plentifull or small number of floures growing and appearing on the tyme about the sommer solstice. For this increaseth and yeldeth most friendly floures for the Bees, which render a colour and savour to the honey.

The said Theophrastus writeth, that the floure of tyme spreade abroad, is destroyed and dyeth, if a bigge shoure of raine happen to fall.

The worthy Neapolitane Rutilius in his husbandrie instructeth, that the whole plant is to be rather set then sowne, about the middle of Aprill in a well labourd earth, lying open to the sunne, and that the same may prosper and come the speedier forward.

We

He willethe the owner to water the plants of tyme, or to molffen them all a day with water finely sprinckled on the beds, in that the tyme so fast drinketh in. If the owner or Gardener would possesse the seedes, he must diligently gather the flowers (in which the seedes are contained) and not labour to seporate the one from the other.

The running tyme loyeth to be set or sowne neare to springs of water, as by a well, or Pond, for on such wise bestowed in the earth, the same yeldeth the fairer leaues. This neither requireth a fatte nor dunged earth, but onely to bee bestowed in a sunnie place, and loyeth in the often remouing. The running tyme doth many times proceede or come of the Basill, rudely or without care bestowed in the earth.

The Phisicke helpes of the Garden and running Time.

The garden tyme heateth and dryeth in the third degree.

The tyme after the well drying, brought to fine powder, and giuen vnto the quantitie of foure drammes at a time, with a draught of Oximel (or vinegar and hony boyled together) not only remoueth the ioynt sicknesse and ache of partes, but purgeth the Choler, and all other humors. The like quantitie giuen, helpeth the passions of the bladder.

The fine powder of tyme, ministred vnto the quantitie of one dramme at a time, with a sponesfull of water and hony well mixed together, preuaileth in short time, against the swelling of the bellie.

The powder taken, vnto the quantitie of three drammes at a time, with a draught of Mellicrate, remoueth the griefe of the hyps, asswageth the paine of the loynes and sides, amendeth the breast, and the inflammations of Hypochondria or the flanches.

The powder giuen, vnto the quantitie of three drammes at a time, with a draught of Oximel fasting, doth maruellously helpe the Melancholike, the troubled in minde, and fearefull.

The powder ministred vnto the quantitie of three drammes at a time, with the best white wine, both morning and evening, doth maruellously cure the blierednesse of the eyes, and the vehement paine of them.

This

This powder in like quantitie bled with good wine, asswageth the grief of the cold Gout and the deadnesse of mouing, and helpeth the stiffness of limmes, drunk morning and euening.

The powder drunk morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of three drammes at a time, with a draught of Oximel, doth in short time asswage the swelling of the Testicles: these hitherto Acius.

The powder drunk with white wine, morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of halfe an ounce at a time, not only moueth vrine, and purgeth the bowels, but sendeth downe the after burden, and sermes in women.

The forme of a Sirupe made of the Tyme with pure Hony, artly boyled, and drunk fasting, doth in short time amend the harde setting of breath, and remoueth all other griefes of the breast, though the spilling forth of the corrupt matter.

The powder is thought to helpe greatly the clearnes of sight, being sundry times taken with meat: but the Tyme ought moderately to be bled, in that (though the often eating) it mightily heateth.

The time giuen to such hauing the falling sicknes, greatly auayleth, in that through the smelling to it (in the time of the fit) they are much reuined, but such ought to sleepe for a while on the soft bedde, of Tyme.

The leanes finely beaten and strewed on woll, and with Oyle applied on loose parts of the bodie, mightilie pzenayleth, and on burnt or scalded places, to great purpose annoynted with Barrois grease.

Here conceiue, that the Tyme which is blacke (as afore vttered) is altogether to bee refused, and only to vse the same bearing a purple floure, and tending to a whitenesse, is best commended for all purposes.

The running Tyme sown in Gardens, is by nature hotte and dry, and this so much heateth, that it both moueth vrine and the reds, yet the same is sower in taste, as the worthy Whistion Galen witnesseth.

If anie drink the fine powder of the running Tyme with pleasant wine, morning and euening, for a certaine time together, doth break the stone of the kidneys and bladder. The herbe laide on the sting of

a Be. speedely helpeth it.

The herbe boyled in pleasant wine and drunke, healeth the bit of an Adder or Snake, the smoke of the same, dyueth away venemous wox: mee. This herbe boyled with vineger and hony, and drunke vnto the quantitie of a draught at a time, profiteth the spitting of blood: the iuice of the hearbe drunke, persourmeth the same, beeing mixed with vineger, & drunke vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time.

The hearbe trayeth the Acutime and stillings of the head, comming of a cold cause, it like wise amendeth the rough and colde stomacke, if the same be taken morning and euening, with good white wine,

The herbe steeped in Rose vineger, and brused, being with the oile of Roses diligently fried and annointed, doeth speedely remouue the headache. The same oyntment applied on the heade, amendeth Frensinesse and the Letharge of often slumbering.

The hearbe boyled in wine and drunke, openeth the stoppings of of the Liver and Splee, and moueth bryne: this drunke in wine sendeth downe the termes, and causeth bryne, and recouereth the bite of venemous beastes. The same boyled in wine and Oyle, allwageth the swelling in the throte, if the throte be daily applied with it.

The hearbe boyled in wine, with the iuyce of Licoz as, recouereth the cough, and purgeth the bzeast: the iuice of the same drunke with vineger, vnto the quantitie of two drammes at a time, stalet the bloudie vomitings.

The hearbe boiled with Annis seedes in wine, not only heateth the stomack, but remoueth winde in the bowels, & easeeth the Strangurie. The Seede in wine, doeth greatly moue bryne, and expelleth mightily the Stone.

The



The worthe helpes of the distilled water of
the running Tyme,

The hearbe, stalks and roote, with the whole substance shredde,
ought to be distilled in Balneo Maria, about the ende of the mo-
neth of June.

The water of the running time, drunk morning and evening un-
to the quantitie of thre ounces at a time, doeth not onely strenghten
and amende the head, braine and stomack, but procureth an appetite
to meate, remoueth the noyse or rumbling of the bellie, softneth the
hardnesse of the stomack, and moueth forward the vyne.

In the lyke maner it drunke not onely comforteth the sight, and
consumeth humours and the distillations of the heade, but mixed
with the water of worme woode, and drunk, helpeth a Quotidian A-
gue. The same drunk to the quantitie of thre ounces at a time, amen-
deth a cooled Liver and Spleene, and recouereth or healeth the bowelles
exulcerated.

This in like order drunke, openeth the stopping of the Nostrils
and eares, restoreth hearing, helpeth gibbinesse, staieyth the desire to
vomit, and expelleth the gripings of the bellie and bowels.

This drunke sundry times, both morning and evening, breaketh
the stone, and moueth vyne. This water applied with a linnen cloth
on brused members, doeth in short time cure them.

What skill and diligence is required in the sowing
and ordering both of the Mintes
and Holihocke.

Chap. 12.

The Garden Mint desireth to be bestowed, neither in a dunged
nor fat earth, but rather in an open, and sunny place: yet
this best to be in a moist place, or by some well. And where
the like is not, the Mint in that ground ought to be often wa-
tered in the first bestowing in the earth, or this otherwise in short
time withereth and dieth.

The *Spinte* ought to be set in the roote or whole *Stemme*, in *Par-uest* or in the *Spring* time. The owner or *Gardener* lacking or not hauing the *Spint* seedes to sow, may in the *Seed* of them, ble or be-
stow in his ground, the seedes of the field or wilde *Spintes*, in setting the sharper endes downeward of the seedes, thereby to tame and put away the wildnesse of them. This plant wel growen by, needeth not after to be renewed or sown euerie yeere, in that once sown or plan-
ted, it after cometh by yearly of the own accord. And for the delec-
table saour which it enioyeth, much desired and bled, both in *broths*
and *Sallets*.

But this plant after the coming by, may in no case bee touched with any *Iron* instrument, in that the same sone after dyeth. This plant flourishing in the *Summer*, becommeth yelowish in the *Win-ter* time.

The *Holihoock* or greater *Hallowes* of the *Garden*, as *Ruellius* out of the learned *Theophrastus* affirmeth, doth often shoote by in-
to the fourme of a tree, and wareth so great, that the *Stemmes* or bo-
die of it may serue to the vse of a *Staffe*, which sendeth forth big stalks,
and leaues both large and round.

The floure of this plant for the proper time flourishing, is named the *winter Rose*, in that this plant yeldeth floures like to the *Rose*, from the beginning of *Haruest*, vnto the *winter* time, which floures both of the redde and white, lesser than the fading or vanishing *Rose*, longer indure and enioy fo:ce.

This *Rose* of the auncient *Greekes* was named *Μολόχη* in that the leaues (as *Columella* reporteth) turn about with the *Sun*, which at some time of the day are fully opened. The auncient *Romanes* did also name it the sown or *Garden Hallowes*. The common people in time past greatly pleased with the beautie of the same, named it the beyond sea *Rose*. For in comelines, neither of them giueth place to the *Rose*, which if the same inioyed a saour, it were not inferiour to the *Rose*, seeing in colour they be equal in bearing of the red carnati-
on and white, so that in saour the *Rose* only excelleth.

This for the woorthie comelinesse and beautie, to bee set in win-
dowes, is at this day diligently sown and set in *Gardens*.

The woorthy *Rutilius* (in his treatise of the *Garden*) instructeth, that
the

the seedes to be committed to the earth, ought rather to be bestowed about the middle of Aprill, in a well dunged and fat ground, and to be often watered, untill the plants be well sprung vp.

The skilfull Columella in his husbandrie vttereth, that this rather togeth to be bestowed in a fat earth, well turned in with dung, and that moyst dung be laide about the rootes of the young plants, in the setting againe, which the said Authour willeth to remoue, after foure waues are well shot vp above the earth.

This learned Columella wyting of the holyhoke, reporteth that the floure (as the Marigold) openeth at the rising of the sunne, full spred at the Noon time, and closeth againe at the going downe of the Sunne.

The Phisicke benefits and helps, both of the Mint, and Garden Malowes or holyhooke;

The Garden Mint is reported to be hote and dry in the second degree, and this in medicine oftner bled dry then greene.

The woorthie Florentinus a singular professor of the Greeke instruction of husbandrie, wyteth, that the Mint for the same might well be accounted an vnprofitable hearbe, seeing the hearbe applyed on a wound, defendeth the same from waxing whole, and to come to a skarre.

If the Mint bee put into milke, it neither suffereth the same to courd, nor to become thicke, insomuch, that laide into courded milke, this would bring the same thinne againe, so that by the same vertue and propertie, he saith to resist and abate the generation, as well in man as woman: but others of a contrarie mind defending the herbe, accounted it verie holtsome, and beneficiall to man.

If the hearbe boyled in wine and oyle, be applyed on the paps of the new milch woman, it doth not after suffer the milke to courd, nor to be thicke, and the milke courded, to become thin againe, whereby it amendeth the hard and ranckled breastes, in daunger to breake, through the milke courded. For which cause, this hearbe is wittily added in the potions of milke, that in the courding of the milke within the stomacke, no peril of strangling through the benefit of this hearbe might ensue.

The iuice of water of the hearbe, drunke with the iuice of the Pomegranat, stayeth the resting or belching of the stomacke, and vomiting, as the worthy Democritus in his husbandrie hath noted.

The Quint brought to fine powder, and ministred in milke, profiteth against the long wormes in the bodie.

If the swollen priuities, be often souped with the decoction of the same, it doth in short time remoue the swelling of them.

This drunke in water with Amylum, asswageth the force of the painefull fluxe of the bellie, and scouring with bloud: besides, it stayeth the ouer great course and shew of the redde in women, and the same healeth vlcers, on the Infants heades.

The saour of this quickeneth the spirites and mind, and the taste woorketh an appetite, and earnest desire to meate.

The iuice of the fresh hearbe drayned vp, amendeth the default in the Rosethrills, which also in the paine of the head, and beating of the temples, is profitably annointed.

The iuice of the hearbe applyed with vineger, retaineth and stayeth the inward courses or fluxes of bloud.

The Quint after the brushing with the oyle of Roses, applyed in plaister forme on hard paps, which be swollen through the milke, doth not onely soften; but defendeth them from mattering.

The hearbe eaten with vineger, looseth the bellie, but dayly eaten for a time together, doth maruellously procure a seemely colour to that creature, and this hearbe at any time vsed, is verie profitable and hole some.

The iuice drunke with vineger, profiteth the spitting forth of bloud, the same annointed on the foreheade, doth asswage the griefes of the head: the iuice with hony and water applyed, remoueth the paine and noyse of ringing of the eares. The iuice tempered with hony, and annointed on the eyes, remoueth the moistnes and dimnes of sight.

The Quint after the boiling in wine receiued, amendeth a stinking or strong saour of the mouth: the mouth after the adding of vineger to it washed diligently, not onely helpeth the teeth, but purgeth the mattered gums: If the teeth in like manner be washed fasting with decoction of Quints, it letteth the mattering of the gums. The decoction in wine, with a litle vineger added, remoueth (through the sun-

dry times taking) the blistering of the tongue, proceeding of heate. The hearbe also tempered with vineger and annointed neare and about the eyes, doth in short time remoue the spots in them.

The Mint in cold sicknesses, peebleth a mightie comforting, reioyeth the mind, and stayeth the will to vomit. The iuice after the mixing with vineger and brimstone, annoynted with a feather on the Shingles, doth with expedition cease the paine.

The hearbe boyled in wine, aswageth the paine of the botwels and Kidneyes, and boyled in wine with oyle, being applyed in plaister soyme, doth both dissolue and cure impostumes.

The Phisicke benefits of the Holyhoke, do here ensue.

The Malowes of the garden or holyhoke, is the like moist by nature, as the other kindes of Malowes, and serueth as well to outward, as inward griefes.

The hearbe, roote, or seedes, boyled in either milke or wine, and orderly drunke, do remoue a hote cough, recouer the Lungs blistered, and is singuler remedie against the consumption of the Lungs.

The holyhoke boyled in either water or wine, and tempered with hony and alum, if the same decoction be gargled and holden so a time in the mouth, doth speedely cure the blisters and putrified sores of the mouth and throte.

The leaues of the holyhoke, after the boyling with meate, eaten with Sallet oyle and a litle salt, looseth the bellie, and amondeth the hoarlenesse of voice: the roote and hearbe boyled vnto the consumption in a maner of the water, will leaue a clamminesse aboue, which applyed on any impostume, ripeneth and softeneth the hardnes of the same.

The commended helpes of the distilled water of the Holihoke.

The distilled water of the holyhoke Roses (in Balneo Maria) gargelled, or applyed without with linnen clothes, is greatly commended for the breakings out of the mouth, and profiteth as well against the outward as inward heates: besides, cureth the Shingles and vlcers of the throte, and all other swellings.

The said water often drunke, is a precious water vnto all inward heats of Feuers, in y the same cooleth & softneth al impostumes of the Lungs

Lungs and sides. It healeth and mitigateth the perilous fire Disenteria, the hote swellings of womens places, the kidneyes and bladder.

This also wageth the paine of the bladder, expelleth the stone, purgeth the kidneyes and bladder, being drunke for a time morning and evening.

The water applyed on the temples in a hote feuer, procureth sleepe, if the feete of the patient in a hote feuer be bathed with it, procureth rest, and ceaseth thirst.

The commended benefits of the distilled water of Mints.

The hearbe with the stalkes finely shred, ought diligently be distilled in Balneo Mariæ about the middle of May.

The water drunke morning and evening unto the quantitie of three ounces, at a time, strengthneth the stomacke, and digesteth the meate receyued. The water drunke in the same maner, profiteth against the stopping of the Liver and Spleene. It openeth also the waies of urine, as the kidneyes and bladder.

The water in like maner drunke, procureth an appetite to meate, stayeth belching and vomiting, the like both this applyed without on the stomacke. The mouth often washed with the same, recovereth a stinking breath, and putride gummes.

The water drunke stayeth sounding, and gibbines of the head. If any taking a slice of Barly bread, and steeping it in this water, tempered with wine or vinegar, shall apply the same warme to the soles of the feet, the savour incontinent yeeldeth a marvellous refreshing and strengthning of the feeble person.

The water in like quantitie drunke, purgeth the matrice, and a linnen cloth wet in it warme, and applied to the privie place, like procureth. The water applyed on hard pappes, dissolneth the milke couched in them, the same for a time drunke, healeth the ruptures within, both of olde and young persons. The water after the mixing with Rue and the Coliander, gargelled in the mouth, restoreth the Vvula fallen. If of the hearbe steeped in Lie, be washed on the scabbes of children, it healeth them speedely.

This

It like vntike, profiteth against wormes, & it will both vntike
conforteth and heateth a colde stomacke.

What care and skill is required in the sowing and workemansly order
sing of the Artchoke. Chap. 13.

The Herbarians write the Artchoke to be a kinde of Thistle,
of them named, the Thistle of the Garden.

The Artchoke whiche befoze grewe wilde in the fieldes,
came by diligence (for the benefite of sale) to bee carefully be-
stowed in the Garden, where through tranell, brought from bya
hellhenelle, to serue vnto the vse of the mouth and belly. The Ar-
tchoke growing with thick scale eares, in forme to the pine-apple,
and sufficiently knowne to most persons, togeth in a loose and dun-
geon earth, yet the same better cometh forthward, being bestowed in a
fatte ground, and by that meanes defended from spoiles, as the
worthy Rutilius reporteth, but sowe in a fast earth after they
groweth, be not so lightly digged vpp of an enemy. The sayde Ru-
tilius putteth the Seedes of the Artchoke, to bee committed to the
Earth in the moneth of Marche, the Seede then increasing by light,
and that in heedes well danged, and workemansly prepared, whiche
bestow in the earth halfe a foote asunder, yet these not deepe put, and
in such maner deale with the seedes, that taking so many vpp, as
you may handsomely with thre fingers thrust vnto the thre vn-
to the middle toyn- in the earth, covering them lightly with loose
Earth, which if here toether happen to enue, the Cardener with
diligence must water the plantes for a time, for the plantes on such
wise handled, will yeeld a tenderer fruite and taller head, as the
worthy Varro reporteth, yet may not the olider hope or looke for
frutes or heapes to come to the full growth and perfectnesse for
eating in the first yere. If the Cardener would bestow seeds to pro-
fite, he ought to make little furrowes in the bedde, well a foote di-
stant one from the other, being in breadth and depth of half a foote,
whiche after fill with olde dung finely broken, and blacke earth in
like manner samil, in whiche so handled, bestowe the seedes to the
depth of the middle toyn- and after couer them lightly with fine
Earth, not pressing or treading it down. And as soone as the plants

R.

haue

have yeelded forth leaues sufficient great: the owner ought to water them often, and to continue the like watering in a ground very dry untill the hearbs yeeld oʒ send forth heads both tender and sufficient big. When the plants shalbe well growne vp, the Cardener must cleanse & purge dayly the beds of weeds, & dung all about the rootes of the plants (if hee will credit Columella) wth of ashes, foʒ the kinde of dung the sayd author reporteth to be most apt and agreeable to that pot-herb, of which by the kinde of the dung, this herb taketh the Latine name.

The owner oʒ Cardener must haue a speciall care, that he bestow not the seedes in the earth with the contrary ends downeward, foʒ these will bring forth Artichokes cranked, weake and very small, if we may credit the Hieronymus Ruellius. If the owner would haue the herb yeeld heads oʒ Artichokes without pickles, he must after the instructions of the Creek writers of husbandry either break the sharp ends of the seedes, oʒ make blunt the prickles (before the bestowing in the earth) on some stone rubbed, which also many as firme to come to passe, if the Cardener paring off the rinde of the Lettuce root, & spreading oʒ cutting y^e same into many small pieces, doth after the bestowing of y^e seedes into ech piece, diligently let these a loote distance a sunder, will after yeeld heads the like.

The Cardener shall possesse Artichokes of pleasant saour, if he lay the seedes to steepe foʒ three dayes before the sowing, in the iuyce of the Rose, oʒ Lilly, oʒ oyle of bayes, made with y^e sweet Almonds, oʒ in any other pleasant iuyce oʒ lycour, which after the drying in y^e aire from the Sun-beames, he comitteth them to y^e earth, foʒ on such wise handled, the fruits yeeld the same saour as the licour in which the seedes were soaked and received. Foʒ by a like crample, the heads shall saour of the bay, if the owner steepe them with the leaues of the Bay tree, oʒ he otherwise making holes, bestowe the seedes within the bayberries, before the committing to the earth: and a like practise may be exercise in all seedes that be great.

The fruits of the herb named y^e Artichoke (will become sweete & delectable in y^e eating (if y^e owner before the comitting of the seedes to the earth) do steepe them foʒ three oʒ three daies, either in new milke, honey, sugred water oʒ wine aromatized, & after the drying in y^e ayre both then bestow them in beds a loote distance one from y^e other: the

Artichokes

Artichokes be set in Barneſt, which is about the moneth of October, that theſe may yeeld plenty of fruits & heads, ought to be thoſe bearing big leaues and ſtalks, which big ſtems growne & ſhot vp in the middes: which big leaues after ſerue to none other purpoſe but to be broken from the bodies, and the plants to be beſet againe in beds, with ſtems in like maner cut off and caſt away, as ſeruing to no vſe, well turned in with dung: theſe ſet in ſuch maner that y^e tender leaues grow vp right, and the ſtemmed in the middle being low broken off, to be diligently covered with light earth. And herein the Gardener muſt haue a care to the watering of them, at times needefull, if the ſeaſons ſufficiently moſt not, either in the winter, or in any other time of the yeare, to ſet ſo ſoone & procure ſpeedily the Artichokes to come: and ſet againe the tender plants in well dunged beds, covering them well about with Aſhes and black earth. the better to heare and ſuffer the cold winter time, which in the yeare following, will yeelde new fruits.

Many ſkilfull Authours write, that if the leaues of y^e Artichoke be well covered in the ground, about y^e beginning of winter, they will after become not only white, but pleaſanter in the eating, whereby to ſerue among the winter meates.

Here I thinke it profitable to the owner to know, that y^e big leaues & branches ought yearely to be broken off, from the olde ſtems & bodies, leaſt the elder in their yeelde might be hindered, and y^e younger plants in farther diſtances ſet, that theie may proſper & ſend forth their fruits the better, for ſuch is the fruitful and plentiful yeelde of this plant, that y^e branches & great leaues broken off from the tender ſtems, and ſet againe in the earth, will after cleaue & ioyne together, as certaine report, and oftentimes to yeelde in the ſame yeare, both the ſtem and outward roughnes with prickles on it. The ſkilfull writers of the Greeke husbandrie will, that the owner or Gardener, in the opening & digging away of the earth, to cut them vp with a ſharp hooke, leauing ſome part of the roote in y^e earth, which ſo pulled vp, and anoynting the roote with ſoft dung, ſet againe in a well laboured ground, turned in with olde dung well choſe ſoote a ſunder, and often water them, when the drie ſeaſon commeth, untill the plants ſhall be ſufficiently ſtrengthened in the earth.

Thoſe which the Gardener mindeth to let run or grow vnto ſeede,

such shall be seperate from all the young plants, as Pallasius teacheth, and cover the heades eyther with a thicke board, or with the boughs of a tree, in that the seedes are commonly wont to be corrupted through the Sunne or Showres of raine, and by that meanes these to perishe and come to no vse, which if the seedes be eyther burnt with the Sunne, or putrified with the moisture of showres, will after yeeld to the Gardener no commoditie in the bestowing in the earth.

The owner or Gardener may not gather the frutes of the Artochokes all at one time, for althoughe the heades ripen not together, but one after the other, so that the owner ought then to gather the frutes, when as these onely haue flowres belowe in forme of a garland, not before that time, wherefore if the Gardener doe stay on till all the flowres be shedde, the frutes will be the woiser, and lesse delectable in the eating.

The Gardener must carefully looke vnto, that the Mice haunt not to the rootes of the Artochokes, for once assured through the pleasaunt tast of them, they after resorte in great number from farre places, to the maruellous spoyle of the rootes, as the Greeke Varro in his woorthy instructions of husbandrie hath vlligently noted, yet not leauing the same without a helpe and remedie: for he reporteth, that the sharpe assault and enterprise of them is withstanded and driuen away, if the Gardener either lappe Woolle about the rootes, or Swynes dung, or bestowe the Figge-tree ashes in like manner about them.

The Moles in like manner doe maruelously harme, and be inuious to the rootes, inso much that through they often casting, and hollowing of the ground, the hollo we plantes are procured to fall or leane through feeblenelle in the earth, for remedie of whiche annoyance, the Gardener may eyther bring vp and learne a young Catte, or tame a Weesill, to hunt dayly in those places.

There be which sette the plantes of the Artochoke, in a salt and drie ground, to the end the Moles shoulde not so lightly in theyr working, overthrow them.

The owner which would vnderstand, and knowe other helpes, let him resorte vnto those experienties, whiche we haue vttered in the first part.

The

The Phisicke benefites and helps of the Artochoke.

The Artochoke eaten greene, or rawe with vinegar reformeth the sauer of the mouth. The Eares and scalp kernels cleauing or sticking round about the head, being tenderly boyled (after the manner of the Sperage) from whiche after the licoure powred, the Eares againe boyled with Butter, and seasoned with vinegar, and salte, doe yeelde a delectable sauce with meate right profitable.

There be some, whiche rather eate the Eares rawe than sodden, being asfoze prepared with Salte and the fine powder of pepper or Coliander seedes straiued vpon, for by that meanes (as they affirme) is the naturall sweetnesse of them more kindly and delectably represented and felt.

Certaine reports, that the Eares setten onely in Wine, to cause vyne and moue the venereal acte, as the learned Hesiodus reporteth, which (as Ruellius hath noted) at the hearing of the sounre, the Grasshoppers then doe lowdest sing, and women greediest to the venereal acte, but men at the same time slowest.

The roote (after cleane scraping and keeping forth of the Wyth) boyled in Wine, and drunke, not onely amendeth the hardness of making water, but the ranke sauer and stinking sinell of y^e Armeholes, whiche Xenocrates affirmeth, of experience, to sende forth on such wise the sincke in the vyne, caused by the heate of the small pockes, or of any other exaction.

The Artochoke tenderly boyled and eaten, is sayd to strengthen the stomache, and helpe somewhat in y^e p^rime places, that when Chylde may be conceiued, as y^e Athenian Chetias & Glancias affirme.

The worthy Galen reporteth, the meate of the Artochoke to be of an euill nourishment, and incommotions to the stomache, especially when the same shall bee hard at the first yeelding of the sounre, for then the Eares possesse a greete quantitie of Cholerike iurce in them, whiche for the same, ought rather to be eaten boyled, than rawe: yet some be of this minde, that the younger headen, rather than full of iurce, being prepared (as asfoze taught) may with the more delight and lesser harme be eaten.

What skill and diligence to be learned in sowing, and workmanly ordering,
both of Endive and Succorie.



The Endive, whether named Succorie by some
Lettuces, serveth either for the use of Medicine, that
for other purposes, so that by a trauell caused to
growe verie plaine in the Garden, for as much as this
of it selfe, by nature, is evermore scure, although it
be a kind of the Lettuce, which ought often to be re-
moued & changed into sandy places, that the nature of it may on
such wise be altered, with lesser trailla to the Gardener.

The Endive thus bestowled in Beddes, may well abide the colde
season of winter, wherefore in colde Countries, this better agreeth
to be sowne here the end of Harvest, and will growe up, to be re-
moued and layde againe in the earth, that these, in the lying, may
on such wise become white, if so be (before the couering) the Beddes
be strewn over with riuier Sand, and often watered (if not holpen
by showres of raine) which then couer with light earth, letting these
so rest, untill by diligence in the watering, they become sufficient-
ly white for Salletes or other purposes: the young plants of the En-
dive are not to be remoued, before that some leaues bee sufficiently
sprong up, and these cut at the endes of the rootes, as well as the
toppes of the leaues, with soft Cow-dung annoynted about the rootes,
before the bestowing in the earth, which lightly couered, water so
long, untill the plants be sufficient strong in the Earth.

The Succorie is of the nature of the Endive, which in like maner
retayneth the proper bitternesse, being not like remoued and orde-
red as the Endive: this desireth moist ground and the earth to bee
well labourd, when some leaues be come up: the plants after the
remouing, ought againe to bee set in a well dunged earth, and that
these may yeelde saide, larger long leaues, let the owner, after the
leaues be somewhat more shot up, up on the myddle of them lay a
piece of a Tylestone, for by the weight of the same, will the leaues
spreade out, and inioy more tustes or grow thicker: By this work-
manly ordering, will the bitternesse of the leaues be remoued, and
they aptly serue in the winter time for the use of the Salletes, if so

he the plantes be set againe in the ende of August, or rather in the beginning of September; when the leaues are shot up big, & in pulling up, the earth not knocked off the rootes, but with soft Cow-dung the rootes gently annoynted about, and dissolved after in bees well turned in with dung.

The leaues layde along in well dunged Beddes (to be white) corner so near with loose earth that the rootes may lye upward; & cover them lying a long in the earth, make some cotterfore in the forme of a herchoing place, or rather Arch upon them the chaffe of coone, for the better defence of the colde, and bitter windes.

Certaine report that the liue may be purchased, if the owner, after certaine leaues of the Syceopye shotte up, bindeth together with a browne thread, and covereth them after with a pot of earth, to the ends that those may daily wake by the rootes, a nourishment from the earth, which by the same meanes, shall purchase both a whitenesse and tenderesse, and loose a great part of the proper sourenesse.

The Phisicke helps, both of the Endyne and Syceopye.

The Endyne, which by another name, is termed the bitter Lettuce, is reported to be colde and drie in the second degree, and of this, only the leaues and seedes serue to the vse of Phisick, yet are the leaues brought apt to be eaten in Sallets.

The roote, by the consent of all writers, is to little vse, therefore in our time seldomie applyed in Medicine.

The Greene leaues exercised in Medicine, are to great purpose, but the drie, pretiaile litle or nothing at all.

The Greene serue to comfort, for which cause they preuaile against the stopping of the Liuer and Wyllie, though the occasion of Cholles, and these like preuaile against a simple and double Vertien, and against the heate of the Liuer, and against hot or burning impostumes eaten either sudden, or raised with vicer: the Syrupe made of the decoction of the Yeare with Sugar, anayleth in all the abovesayd.

The iuyce of Syrupe giuen with Riberb, about the fourth or fift day

day after adjection of the matter, greatly profiteth for the heale of the Liver, a good curing in paiment, the first beere of Flax applyed in plaister to me, greatly profiteth. If the leaver can not be had, then use the flaxen bruised and boyled, applying it to the same place places, which greatly profiteth.

The Juice of leaver applyed on hot pulses, greatly profiteth with the Juice of the leaver in them the beere distilled and laid on hot pulses, it greatly helpeth. The beere applyed on the left eye with the finger, mightily profiteth the Cardiacke passion, the same on the right eye, stayeth the fluxion of the eye.

The Decoction made of the Endive and Parts tongue, profiteth against the things evil, the Decoction applyed in plaister to me, with Cedrus and myrrour, healeth the scabiness, the impostumes, and the swellings, the Juice applyed with the finger and Rosewater on the temples, after dinner with the beere, the drinking of the Juice, untill the second day, recovereth the spitting of blood, and alwayeth the course of Sperme: the Juice is effectuously annoynted with Ceruse and vinegar, on all partes, which are healed by cooling.

The Sicozie is of a drye and colde qualitie, yet somewhat more than the Endive, this beere (as Egineta reporteth) is both of cooling and drying in the first degree, and hath also the vertue of binding.

The beere bruised with the roots, and rounde in Achyles or flatte Bals made of the same, which after dissolved in Rosewater, and annoynted on scabbed places, doth both cure them, and causeth a finer skin. If any use this potion, made with the Juice of Sicozie, Endive, and Parts tongue, to which a quantity of Sugar added, in the boiling with water and a little vinegar, doth in short time recover the stopping of the Liver and Spitt, so that pills of Ruyerb be after ministered, & the comforting Electuarie of the three Saunders taken.

If any prepareth this plaister made of Serapium, and Myrrour, of each a like weight, to which the oyle of Camomill and Honey in like proportion added, and the same applyed warme to the womans private place, doth on such wise purge the Matrice, that she may after conceive with childe. And in the proper purgings of the women (as Plinie reporteth) the decoction of the beere in water soured with vinegar, that it draweth forth the dead yongling.

The

The iuyce of the Verbe boyled, and ministred, looeth the bellye, helpeth the Lint, hydneys, and stomacke, boyled in vineger remoueth the vering payne of the vaine, yea the kinges euill, applyed with spilke or water and Hony, if it be without a feuer.

The Cychorie taken with vineger (as Dioscorides reporteth) is profitable to the stomacke, for that the same in meate asswageth the heate and infirmities of the same. And by it selfe applyed, and wyth barley meale layed plaster-wise on the region of the heart, greatly helpeth, in the plague, and burning Agues the same is to be vsed to great purpose. It also qualifieth Pestilent pushes, if the water of the decoction of the same be applyed on the places, with linnen clothes. The floure throwne into a pismyers hil, soone after becommeth as red as bloud.

This herbe boyled in wine, and taken with meate, is very profitable to the stomacke, in that the same helpeth digestion, the floures brused with the rutes, and applyed in plaster fourme on the Goute, doe incontinent asswage the paine of the same proceeding of heate. This plaster applyed on the Shingles, doth marvellously remoone the nightie heate.

The commended vertues of the distilled water, both of the Emdyne and Cychorie.

The time aptest for the distilling of Emdie, is the end of May, the leaues (before the distilling) plucked from the stemes, and finely shredde.

The Emdie water drunke vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time both morning and evening, profiteth the straightnes and stopping of the brest, in the same maner drunke, is available to women with childe in that this both strengthneth them, & amendeth senses.

The Emdie water mixed with the water of Plantain, Rose water, and the white Sief without Opium, of which an Syment made after arte, doth in short time recover blers distempers of a hot matter, and especially those hapning on the pstities.

The said water with the iuyce of Marsh Mallooe rootes, oyle of Roses and Camomil, Saffron, barley meale, and the yolkes of Egges mixed

mired altogether ouer the fire, and applied in plaiſter forme, is a pre-
ſent remedie, both for the Swete of the handes and feete.

The Endius water drunke vnto the quantitie of foure or ſiue
ounces at a time, both morning and evening, recouereth the plague,
repelleth or putteth away the kinges euill, ceaſeth thirſt, and in good
quantitie drunke allwageth the heate of the Luer.

This helpeth the ſtiche in the ſide, and picking felt about the
heart, drunke vnto the quantitie of three or foure ounces at a tyme,
both morning and evening, a linnen cloth or bolſter of hemp applyed
on a hot Luer, qualifieth the heate, or in what part of the body the
like hapneth, but as the linnen clothes were drie, encreaſe to wet
them in this water.

The beſt time for diſtilling the Cicchoyle, is in the middle of
May, the hearbe and roote to be finely thred, beſore the diſtilling in
a tin Limbeck.

The water of Cychoyle drunke vnto the quantitie of two ounces
at a time, both morning and evening, and at ſpoone, or taken with
drinke in this maner, remoueth the heat of the ſtomack. This drinke
in the like maner or applyed with linnen clothes on the region of the
Heart, both comforteth and ſtrengthneth the heart and ſtomack.

And as this applyed with linnen clothes on the luer, allwageth
the heate of it, ſo it openeth the ſtopping of the ſame. This drinke in
the ſaid maner, preſerueth the creature from the plague. Thys lyke
auayleth for carbuncles, eyther drunke, or applyed with linnen
clothes on the places; this alſo often drunke, ſtayeth the riſing of the
lunges vnto the the throte, and ſtoppeth the perillous ſiſe Diſen-
teria.

The water in like quantitie drunke, openeth the ſtopping of the
Luer and ſplee, this gargelled in the mouth and drunke, helpeth
the ſwelling of the Vnula and throte, it helpeth alſo waſhed members
if thoſe bee often baſhed with the ſame and drunke in like condition
or applyed with linnen clothes, helpeth the bite of a venemous beaſt.

The ſoures after the gathering in the morning, diſtilled in Bal-
neo Maria and orderly applyed, ſerueth vnto diuerſe impedimentes
of the eyes, as vnto the ſickers of them, the miſtynesse or dimneſſe
of ſight, the Wyneſweb, and ſpots in the eyes, and vnto many other
like grieues.

What

What care, skill, and secrets to bee learned in the sowing, and
workmanly ordering of the Lettuce.
Chap. 15.



The Garden Lettuce desireth a well laboured ground
fat, moyst and dunged appearing for the moze part
by the fourth day about the Earth, so that the seeds
in the earth be not burned of the sunne, or the ground
unfruitfull: the seede may be committed to the earth,
all the yere throughe if the place for growing, shal
be battell, dunged and moist. The seedes may be sowed in beds thick
together, and in the moneth of March or beginning of April, in that
the tender plants can not indure the nipping frosts nor colde ayre.
Those seedes which the owner bestoweth in beds in the moneth of
September will so be hardened for the winter time, that the plantes
may wel endure to be remooued and set at any time, and watered for
two or thre dayes together, vnlesse these be otherwise moistened with
the daily and sweete showres of the ayre. And in committing of the
seedes to the earth, the owner ought to haue a care for watering of
the beds least the heat consisking in the dung, breatheth or casteth
the seedes forth of the earth.

The plants risen or sprung by wel sowe or fine leaues about the
earth ought then to be remooued and sette agayne into a fatte
ground, a good distance one from the other, and to water them
well at the rootes, so that it freeze not, nor the season be very
hote.

The owner or Gardiner may not remoue (to sette agayne) the
small or common Lettuces, but the great which will become cris-
ped and thick (named of diuerse, the Romane Lettuce) that yeeldeth
whyte and farre bigger seedes: these if the Gardener bestoweth a-
gayne in Beds, will shote vp farre faster and greater in Counte,
and in taste pleasaunter, if he especially bytake away the first leaues
before the setting of them in Beds, so as much as the first antwater
stalken haue much milke in them, whiche will lightly become bitter
throughe the heate of the sunne.

If the owner would possesse faire and white Lettuces, he ought to
choyse

bynde the leaues vp together with a threede, well fve dayes before the plucking vp and setting againe in other Beddes, which so done, hee must straw thicke ouer, with riner or sea sand, which the worthy Plinie sremeth only to ascribe to those which yeelde the white seedes, whose nature is such, that they best indure the colde winter. But if these thought the default of the place, season, or seedes, were hard, the Gardener may procure the plantes to grow tender, by plucking them vp, and setting them in well wrought beddes.

The Lettuce spreadeth into a breadth, if so be the owner eether setteth it a sinder, or when it is growne into bigge leaues, the tops gently cut off, it be pressed downe with a Turffe of Earth, Tile or Potshard, whereby it may the lesse shete vp into a skumme. For though the twaight be layed vpon, the plant kept vnder, is forced to creep, and shed forth into a breadth, as the singular Florentinus in his Greeke husbandry, and after him Colamella, to these, Plinie and the worthy seapolitan Rutilius offer.

The Lettuces are caused to growe broad, round, thicke of leaues, crisped, and low by the earth, if the plants remoued when they be that vp a hand breadth, be after the cutting away of the heary rootes annoynted well about with newe Colo dung, and in heaping the Earth well about them, be often watered, and as soon as these are growne to a more strength, to clip the tops of the leaues off with a sharp payre of sheares, and to couer them with pottes of earth new sited, in such maner that the tops beaten or pressed downe, may growe tuffed, rounde vp, and white, as the sayde Florentinus (in his Greeke instructions of husbandrie) reporteth that he did.

If the owner minded to haue Lettuces swete in taste and smell, let him (two dayes before the pulling vp) binde vp the tops of the leaues hard together, for by that meanes in the farther growing, will the plants be the sayer, sweeter, and whiter. Wherein remembryng, that at the tying (on such wise) of the plants, and they from gen growne to be then pressed downe, as afoze taught, with either Tile or potshard or Turffe of Earth.

The skilfull Florentinus (with also affirme) that the plants may be caused to grow swete & pleasant of smell, if the owner bestoweth of the lettuce seedes, into y citron seedes, before the committing to earth
which

which likewise the Cardiner may perfoyme, by making the seedes in
either damask or mulke mater, for certaine dayes.

More I thinke it not impertinent to the matter, to recite in this
place the meruailous drinke of Aristoxenus Cyrenens: this man as
Plinie writeth, leauing his proper countrey, for the earnest desire he
had to Philosophie, & seeking a felicity in banquetting dishes, wafered
at euening diuers Lettuces (as they growe on the earth) with wine
and honny mixed together, & with the same lycour so long filled the,
untill the hearbes had sufficiently drunke: which after hee had left
them vnto the next morowe, boasted that hee had purchased delicacies
from the earth: this is doubt a worthy inuention for a proper ban-
ket, but no philosophy consisting in it: therefore leauing further to
report of this, we will returne to our former matter.

The Lettuce obtaineth a tenderer leafe, or the leaues become the
tenderer, if the roote (as aforesaid) be diligently annoynted about with
the best Cow-dung, & watered at needfull times with river or run-
ning water, & the tops of the leaues, as I aforesaid, tied close together
with a thread, well two daies befoze the pulling vp & setting again.

If the Cardener desire to haue a plant to growe of a marueilous
forme, and diuers in taste, hee shall with an easie cost and light tra-
uaille (as the fullish Grecke Didymus reporteth) perfoyme the same;
if he will properly make a hole into a rōunde pellet made of Coates
dung, and into the same put of the Lettuce, Cresses, Bassill, Rocket,
and Radish seedes (as the like Rutilius writeth) and that ball wrap-
ped in dung, be beset in a well laboured earth, the furrowe not
being deepe, and soft dung layde ouer, with the light earth: and this
often and gently (or by litle and litle) sprinkled with water: for
the radish shooting downe perfoymeth the roote, but the other seedes
into a heighth, the Lettuce rising withall, & each yeelding the plant
in their proper taste.

There be some which in two or three terdyles of the Coate or
sheepe drunke, are made vp into a ball; bestowe the foresaid seedes,
and lying this in a linnen cloth, doe set it into the earth, with the like
care and diligence, as aboue is vttered.

Many of the Latin writers of husbandry taught the same in an
other manner, by gathering whole leaues of the Lettuce, growing next
to the roote, in the holow pittes and places of which leaues, the owner

to bestowe, except the it adish (as Ruellius writeth) or the Parsley (as Ruellius instructeth) all the afoze named seedes, which leanes annointed about with soft dung to be set into a well dunged ground, and the seedes diligently couered ouer with earth.

If any would possesse Lettuces for the winter turne, he ought to conferue them (as Columella instructeth) after this manner, in plucking first away the outwarde leaues rounde about, that the tender leaues left apparant & vncouered, might well be salted in an earthen pot or other vessell, and left couered for a day and a night, after such maner, vntill these with the help of the Salt, yelded forth a Brine.

The Brine throughtly purged away with fresh water, & the licour pressed forth of the leaues, to let them lye abroade on a Lattesse, vntill the leaues be sufficient dry, then to strawe the dry Dill, and Fenell on them, after this to lay the heapes or handfulls of the Lettuces into the vessell againe, on which to poure the licour made of two parts of vineger and one of the Brine: after this, so to thrust down the whole substance with a dry thickening, that the licour may stote and appeare well aboue all, which on such wise ordered, must diligently be tended vpon, that as often as the substance aboue seemeth to lye bare and vncouered, to fill alwaies vp with the sayd licour, but with a sponge keepe cleane the lippes and outside of the pot, washed diligently about with fresh Conduite water, and this so often vse, as neede shall requyre.

The phisicke benefits and helps of the Lettuce.

The Lettuce cooleth and moystneth in the second degree, Agneta affirmeth that the Lettuce both manifestly cooleth and moystneth, through which it procureth sleepe, and as the same among other pot-hearbs greatly nourisheth, euen so is it a worker & canser of good blood.

Certaine report that Augustus Caesar by using of Lettuce in time of his sickness recovered health: and no maner waye, in that the same helpeth digestion, and ingendzeth better bloud than any of the pot-hearbs: the Lettuce sound of experience to be commodious to the stomach, procureth also sleepe, looseth the belly, and causeth plentifulnesse of milke in the breasts: the Lettuce seede giueth to flourish

the

the plentifulnes of milk, & sharpneth the sight, being taken in drinke: the same drinke in wine procureth sleepe: a plaster only made of the effuce, & applied on hot impostumes & the shingles, both mightie cole: the Lettuce sodden and mixed with the oyle of Olive, receined inward by potion, both help in short time the dyspnie.

The iuyce of the Lettuce annointed on the forehead of him that hath the feuer, and can not sleepe, procureth rest and sleepe to the patient (as the skilfull Florentinus writeth) which also affirmeth, that a man shall not be overcome with drinke, if he also eate with a fasting stomach, Greene Lettuce.

To these he addeth, that seedes of the Lettuce by used and drunke, to stay the shedding of Sperm, for which cause this is profitably taken or drunke against the night pollutions, hapning to many yong persons.

This autho^r besides uttereth, that the Lettuce laide vnder the cornerlet, the sick person not knowing thereof, and gathered after this manner, as with the left hand pulled vp by the roote before the sun rising, both sone after cause sleepe. A like to this hee repositeth, if siue, three, or one leafe be laide priuily vnder the bolster of the sick, but in such manner, that the bigger end of the stalk and leafe lye to the feetward, and the top or smaller ende to the head.

Here learne, that the plentifull and dayly eating of the Lettuce of married persons, is very incommodious and noysome to them, as the Greeke writers of husbandry haue noted, in that the same (as they write) not only doth diminish the fruitfulness of children, but the children after borne, do become idle, scollish, & peeuish persons: but the physicians in our time write contrary: for they say, the lettuce neither doth increase euil blood, nor the same thoroughly perfect, yet is the lettuce (by their agreement) worthier than the other pot-herbs, for the lettuce is preferred (as Galen writeth) & not without good reason to other herbs in that there is none known or found to be of better nourishment.

This also in the Sommer time (as the sayd Autho^r writeth) is a grateful and profitable meate, forasmuch as by nature it colleteth this ministered to hote & Cholericke stomachs, is maruelously available: yet the often vse dulleth the sight of the eyes, & procureth a moistnes, yea & abateth the desire of the venereal act: this also through the often eating greatly harmeth such fetching the winde short spitting vp of blood, and the acumatike: this herb besides too often & much vsed
(as well

(as wel sodden as raw) is no lesse perillous than the eating of y^e Dem-
lock: the Lettuce in the sommer time is vsed rather for whisik sake,
than for the proper nourishment which it yeeldeth, as vnto the moy-
stening and cooling: yet this seeing it may be discerned cold, who need-
eth to doubt, that it can ingender in any manner sounde and pure
bloud in vs: for the substance of it common to vs, which is both mil-
kie and swete, and to these meanly digested, is for the same readily &
lightly chaunged into bloud: the Lettuce therefore eaten moderate-
ly, doth procure in vs good bloud, and helpeth many times the tertian
agewe, and the hearbe is sayd to loose the belly, in that this through
the proper moisture and coldnes, both cooleth and tempereth the im-
moderate heate of the liuer, which notwithstanding for the speedy
and vehement distribution and carying away of the meate & drinke,
is many times want to hynde the belly: the hearbe eaten either raw,
or boyled with vinegar and sugar, doth dissolue the stopping of the
Sp^lit and L^yuer, yet eaten raw in much quantity, is sayd to trouble
the sight, and both harme the eyes, and cause a mistinesse that thick-
neth and bulleth the visue spirites, and causeth the chrySTALLINE hu-
mor troubled, and offendeth the animall spirite through the proper
coldnesse consisting in it.

Many vse the Lettuce before it bee risen into a Salke, boyling it in
water or broath, which likewise (the worthy Galen reporteth) that
he did in his old age, yet not eating the same before the boyling, for
the hardnesse which he found to ensue by the eating of it raw: not-
withstanding the sayd Galen in young age vsed the rawe Lettuce,
to repress the heat of choller in the stomacke: but when hee came to
old age, hee vsed to eate the Lettuce boyled at supper, to procure the
sweter and longer sleep in the night: so that the Lettuce boyled &
eaten at supper, or at the houre of going to bed, was to him a singu-
lar remedy to cause a quiet sleep.

The auncient vsed not to eate the Lettuce at y^e beginning of sup-
per, but at y^e latter end, the reason of which was, that seeing y^e Let-
tuce (as we haue aforesayd) is of a cold and moist nature, therefore y^e
eating of the same at the end of supper, & mixed with the other dain-
ties in the stomack, it causeth the sooner & sounder sleep in the night,
and this the readier represseth the vaporous fumes of heady wine, &
drunkenesse: also it is the sooner mastred and stayed through the
mightie

mightie mofling of the braine. The Lettuce seeds brused, and mixed with the white of an Egge and womans milke, applied in plaister forme on the temples or foreheade warme, at the going to rest, doeth maruellously procure sleepe: A like to this, doeth the iuice of the Lettuce, and womans milke, of eche a like quantitie, to which halfe an ounce of white Popie seed brused, & applied warme on the forehead.

The Saide brused and drunke, ceaseth the often imaginations of the venereal act in sleepe, and represseth the desire of the naturall act.

The woorthie Physicians in our time, haue deuised a moze healthfull way for the eating of rawe Lettuce, at Dinners and Suppers in the Sommer time, by mixing with it vinegar, oile Oliue and Salte, (which so prepared) ioyning with other meates on the table, that the same may stir vp the feeble appetite, caused by great heate, and both temper the burning of blood, and mitigate the heate of the liuer and heart, notwithstanding the hearbe in this maner prepared, ought warily to be used, seeing the immoderate vse of the hearbe (as afoze vttered) both extingwish the earnest will to the venereal act.

The married persons (desiring the procreation of children) ought soberly and measurably food on the Lettuce, but to the Cholerick persons this hearbe is not denied, so that the colnesse of it with Rocket. Cresses, Pintes, Patozam, and such like bee afoze tempered, to the apter cooling of their stomacks.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of Lettuce.

The Garden Lettuce gathered about the middle of Maye, ought after the finely shcedding, to be distilled with a soft fire either in Balneo Mariae or a Lin Limbeck. This water of the crisped or Garden Lettuce drunk to the quantitie of two ounces at a time, both morning and evening, profiteth the Liuer, in that by nature it cooleth and comforteth the same, and cooleth the blood inflamed. The water in like maner drunke, stayeth the perillous flire Disenteria, & other vehement flures of the bellie: this amendeth the trembling of members, and helpeth those which cannot quietly sleepe: this annointed on the temples of the head, and pulses of the hands procureth sleepe.

The water drunke, helpeth women lacking milke, if they either
take

take it alone or in drink, so on such wise, this procureth store of milk in the breastes. The water ceaseth and amendeth a hotte and dryeough taken in drinke, mollifieth the throte, cleneth the breast and lungs, ceaseth thirst, tempereth the heate of the stomacke, liuer, and kidneys, this besides in good quantitie taken, loseth the belly.

What care and skill is required in the sowing and ordering of the Purcelane and Rocket. Chap. 16,

The Garden Purcelane, how diligently the same is bestowed, so much the larger it spreadeth on the earth, and yeldeth the thicker lease. This desireth to bee sown in Februarie, Marche, Aprill, Maye and June, and in no other times, for this hearbe cannot well endure the colde season. This plentifully yeldeth and spreadeth, being bestowed in beds well turned in with olde dung, or in grounde verie fat of it selfe, or other wise sown amongst Coleworts, Onions, and Leeks. And after these have toyed a yere in the Garden, they will yearly come vp without paines to the Gardener, of the owne accord, yet the hearbes desire euery yere, to be often watered, to the ende that these may yeld the bigger Tusse, and thicker lease.

The Seedes ought to be sown vnder the shadow of Trees, and in an Harboure where trees growe not too thicke, for these otherwise bestowed vnder a thicke shadowe, growe thinne and smal of lease. The Purcelane is one of the Garden hearbes, serued first in Sallets with Oyle, Vineger and a little Salte, as well at the meane, as rich mens tables, yea this for a daintie dish with many serued first at the table in the winter time, preserved after this maner.

The greatestt stemmes and leaues of the Purcelane without rootes were gathered in that the smaller leaped (lightly decayed and withered) and these with water clearely and thoroughly clenfed from the fine sande, hanging on, and the filthe or corrupt leaues if any suche were cleane purged away, and these so long they dried in the shadow, vntil they were somewhat withered, for other wise (through the plentie of moisture) they either moulded or rotted in the lying. After these were they infused in veriuice made of some grapes, strewed thicke ouer with greene Fennel, bestowed in an earthen pot glazed within,

or for the lacke of it, in a sweete vessel of wood: after this, the whole sprinkled wel ouer with Salt, laying greene Fennel againe ouer the Salt, and sundry courses of Purselane, with Salt and Fennell bestowed to the filling vp of the pot, and ouer the vpper bed of Purslane again, a thick course of greene Fennel strowed, which settled the whole mixture downe into the pot.

These being done, the licoure which was tempered or mixed with two parts of vinegar, and one of veriuice made of grapes was poured vpon, in such order and so full that the same reached vp to the brimme or lip of the vessel. The same pickle or sauce at the end, close covered with a lidd, was set vp in a dry place to be preserved far from the beames of the Sun comming, least the substance through the standing of the place might gather a vine or mouldiness ouer the same: which also as they affirme may be auoyded, if the Purslane be not suffered to lye floating aboue, but alwaies covered well ouer with the licoure: when they bled and serued it at the table, they afoze densed it with warme water or wine, and pouring sweet Oile on the Purslane, they set it as a first dish on the table, to procure an appetite to the guests set down to meat. The Rocket is added to the Lettuce in Sallets, to the end it may temper the contrarie vertue of the same, so that the Lettuce is seldom eaten with meat without the Rocket, and the Sallet on such wise prepared is caused the delectabler, and yieldeth the more health to man. And the worthy Galen in his booke de aliment. & facultat. willethe no man to eate the Lettuce or Purslane without the Rocket, nor the Rocket contrariwise in any Sallet, without Lettuce or Purslane, that in as much as the one coleteth and harmeth the veneriall ac, the other through the heating in the either matter, profiteth man. The seedes may be committed to the earth and the herbe planted, as wel in the winter time, as in sommer, for it neuer feareth the colde, nor any other diltemperancy of the ayre, nor this requireth great labour about the bestowing of the seedes in the earth, and after the comming vp, it especially ioyeth to be often weeded, but the seedes to be sown in a sandie or grauelly ground, ought afoze to be well turned in with dung.

¶ 2

The

The Phisick helpes and remedies both of the Purse-
lane and Rocket.

The Purselane coleth in the third degré, and moistneth in the second, the herbe vled fresh & greene, is better allowed: (for this dried, hath smal vse & vertue) in that it mitigateth & moistneth.

The Purselane thzough the proper coldnesse, allwageth hot and Cholerick fluxes, thzough the oft applying and cooling, & helpeth the persons afflicted with a burning Feuer, and the teeth astringed or on edge, by eating of sowze thinges, is amended by the onlie eating of the fresh herbe. The iuice of this applied, helpeth the Shingles, and both brydeth the veneriall act, and abateth sleepe. The herbe expelleth the woymes of the belly, and drunke with wine, staeth the perilous fluxe Disenteria. The decoction of the Purselane, holden for a while in the mouth, ceaseth the toothache, if the iuice be annointed, helpeth outward inflammationis. The person which hath a hot stomack, or the mouth of the stomack swollen, shall thzoughly be holpen by eating of the fresh Purselane. The iuice drunke, mightely cooleth inward heates, the herbe eaten, amendeth the vlcers of the puyities, yet hurtfull to the eies, and somewhat cooleth the bodie. A plaister made of the Purselane, and applied with barley meale on the hote vlcers (where a seare is that the matter in them putriflieth) much profiteth, or if it shall be a hote impostume, which fleeth within from one member to another, this greatly amendeth. The Purselane also remoueth the vlcers of the head, if bzuised it be tempered with wine, and the head washed with the same.

This applied, helpeth swollen eyes, and preyenteth against the spitting of blond, yet eaten rawe, filleteth the stomacke with a clauing humoure, the daily eating of it, abateth the desire to the venereal act, yet eaten with vineger, it remoueth the burning Feuer: the hearbe bzuised with barley meale, and heated on the fire, and then applied to the stomacke, qualifieth the heate of the same: the Purselane seed of women molested with the monthly course, staeth it without griefe in short tyme.

The Purslane chawed in the mouth, profiteth against the bléding of the Nose, the same doth the iuice perfozme annointed on the Fore-head. The Purselane mixed with barley meale, & applied in plaister
to me

fozme, ceaseth the head-ache, ertinguisheth the heate of the eyes, stayeth the perillous fire Discenteria, and strengthneth both the Kidneyes and bladder. The iuice giuen in drinke, helpeth burning fevers, killeth the wormes in the bellie, and stayeth the spitting forth of blond.

The iuice bestowed in glister wise, helpeth the excoziations in the bowels of women, and the rawnesse of the priuie places within, procured by distillations from the heade.

The iuice of the hearbe is profitably annointed on the head, with the oyle of Roses, or oyle of Olue, against the head-ach caused by the heat of the sunne, and woundes dangered by blakking, or in a furious heat this mightely mitigateth, with barley meale annointed.

The hearbe (to great purpose) is applyed on the Pawill of Infants falling forth by crying, and the hearbe chewed or rather the iuice boyled, stayeth the griefe and loose teeth of the heade, yea the iuice eaten rawe, stayeth the kernels and blcers in the mouth and swelling of the gummes.

Leontinus a Greeke writer of husbandrie writeth, that the lease of the Purselane holden vnder the tongue of the person molested with thirst to mitigate the desire of often drynking, and Plinie writeth, that the iuice to remoue wartes, by annointing the places many dayes together, and he also writeth, that the inflammations of the pappes and Goues may be asswaged and healed by the iuice of Purselane with honey.

The saide Plinie reporteth, that the roote of the hearbe hanged with a threde about the necke, remoueth the griefe of the fall of the Vuula, which like happened to a Judge in Italie, as hee writeth.

The hearbe Rocket heateth and moisteneth in the second degree, the seedes and leaues are onely vled in medicines.

The hearbe boyled and eaten, increaseth the Sperme in a man, which Egineta (lib. 1.) like witnesseth. saying, that the Rocket obtaineth a great vertue in heating, and supposed to increase sperme, and for the same, to stirre up a desire to the venereal act, besides to cause (thorough the often eating alone) a giddynesse and paine of the heade.

The Rocketh increaseth a strong heat, for which cause the same is hurtful

hurtfull to the head, but the garden Rocket boyled with the Lettuce and Bete, worketh or causeth no harme, and in such maner eaten, the same encreaseth the milke in women giuing sucke, and Purles.

The Rocket eaten, and applyed in plaster wise on the pecten, causeth vyne, softneth the bellie, comforteth the stomacke, and helpeth digestion, the iuice of Rocket mixed with an Ore gall, recovereth blacke scars vnto a whitenesse: the pynples or pusshes on the face, the iuice with hony annointed amendeth in short time.

The iuice of seede mixed with hony, and annointed on the head, and often vled with meat, doth kill the scythes and wormes of the head, but the often vlc of Rocket procureth grypings of the bellie. The root after the tender boyling bruised and applyed in plaister forme on broken and bruised bones, doth put away the paine, the seede bruised and drunke in wine recovereth the byte of venomous beastes. A skilfull practicioner reporteth, that if three leaues of the Rocket, be gathered with the left hand, and after the boyling in water, and hony mixed together, taken in drinke, the same (saith he) maruellously availleth against the Jaundise, and hard swelling of the mylt.

The commended vertues of the distilled waters
of Purselane.

The hearbe, stemme, and leaues of the Purselane shred togither ought to be distilled in Balneo Mariae, about the ende of Aprill.

The water of Purselane drunke vnto the quantity of three ounces at a time, both morning and evening, for three or foure dayes togither, amendeth the spitting vp of bloud, and the perillous fire Dysenteria.

The water drunke in like quantitie at a time kappeth any fire of the bellie, yea putteth away a hote and drye cough: this like profiteth against the heate of the Liver, ceaseth thirst, helpeth the plague and remoueth the shortnesse of fetching breath.

This water also profitable to infants against heat & the wormes, given in drinke both morning and evening, vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time.

If in two ounces of water of Purselane, ten barley cornes waight of

of the seede of Philum or steawt be steeped for a night, and with a sponge dipped in this the tongue bee washed three or foure times a day, which through great heat in a feuer or other sicknesse is affected, and dyatweth to a blacknesse, this in short time recouereth.

It helpeth vnto a cooling of the inflamed bloud, either drunke alone or taken in drink and repellith the griefes of the Bladder.

What skill and diligence is required, in the sowing

and ordering of the Chisel Smallege,

Taragon and Cresset.

Chap. 7.

The hearbe Cheruill loveth to bee sowne in a well dun-

The hearbe Cheruill loveth to bee sowne in a well dun-
ged earth, in the monethes of Februarie, March and
Aprill, sometimes in August and September, to possesse
the hearbe in the winter time, and this the better pro-
spereth, through the often watering, butill it bee well

come to the Chisel Smallege.

The Smallege seedes ought to be sowne in a well laboured earth,
and neare to a stone wall or thicke hedge, this hearbe well loveth in
the shadow, & cometh well up in any ground. And after this hearbe
be once bestowed in the garden, a man shall hardly weede it forth
quite, and the Gardener may leaue a sticke or two, to shoot by into
seedes from yeare to yeare, for this hearbe will indure for ever, with-
out any weeding at all. The sower may commit the seedes to the
earth after the middle or end of Februarie, vnto the beginning of Sep-
tember: This hearbe hath the like vertue and properties, which the
Chisel Smallege hath.

The Taragon of the garden, bearing seede like to the flaxe,
ought to be bestowed in a well dunged earth, and after the plantes be
that to meane a foot high, the Gardener ought then to take by the
whole bodies, and set them againe in the selfe same earth, which often
water until they haue taken strong roote in the earth.

The Tara-
gon enioyeth the like properties, as the Rocket, and may not bee ea-
ten a part or alone, but rather with the Lettuce, Parselane, and such
like hearbes.

The

hurtfull to the head, but the garden Rocket boyled with the Lettuce and BATES, worketh or radleth no harme, and in such maner eaten, the same encreaseth the milke in women giuing sucke, and Purles.

The Rocket eaten, and applyed in plaister wise on the pecten, causeth vyne, softneth the bellie, comforteth the stomacke, and helpeth digestion, the iuice of Rocket mixed with an Dre gall, recovereth blacke scars vnto a whitenesse: the pynples or pusshes on the face, the iuice with hony annointed amendeth in short time.

The iuice or seede mixed with hony, and annointed on the head, and often vled with meat, doth kill the Pestes and wormes of the head, but the often vs of Rocket procureth grypings of the bellie. The root after the tender boyling bruised and applyed in plaister forme on broken and bruised bones, doth put away the paine, the seede bruised and drunke in wine recovereth the byte of venomous beastes. A skillfull practicioner reporteth, that if three leaues of the Rocket, be gathered with the left hand, and after the boyling in water and hony mixed together, taken in drinke, the same (saith he) maruellously availleth against the Jaundise, and hard swelling of the mylt.

The commended vertues of the distilled waters of Purselane.

The hearbe, stemme, and leaues of the Purselane shred togither ought to be distilled in Balneo Mariae, about the ende of Maye.

The water of Purselane drunke vnto the quantity of three ounces at a time, both morning and evening, for three or foure dayes together, amendeth the spitting bp of bloud, and the perillous fire Dysenteria.

The water drunke in like quantitie at a time stayeth any flure of the bellie, yea putteth away a hote and drye cough: this like profiteth against the heate of the Liver, ceaseth thirst, helpeth the plague and remoueth the shortnesse of fetching breath.

This water also profitable to infants against heat & the wormes, given in drinke both morning and evening, vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time.

If in two ounces of water of Purselane, ten hartly coynes waight

of the seede of Philimon or sea wort be steeped for a night, and with a sponge dipped in this the tongue bee washed three or foure times a day, which through great heat in a fever or other sicknesse is abused, and byaweth to a blacknesse, this in short time recovereth.

It helpeth vnto a cooling of the inflamed bloud, either drunke alone or taken in drink and repelleth the griefes of the Bladder.

What skill and diligence is required, in the sowing and ordering of the Chard or Smallage, Taragon and Cress.

Chip. 7.

The hearbe Chard will loyeth to bee sowne in a well dunged earth, in the monethes of Februarie, March and Aprill, sometimes in August and September, to possesse the hearbe in the winter time, and this the better prospereth, through the often watering, untill it bee well come up.

The Smalledge seedes ought to be sowne in a well laboured earth, and neare to a stone wall or thicke hedge, this hearbe well loyeth in the shadow, & cometh well up in any ground. And after this hearbe be once bestowed in the garden, a man shall hardly weede it forth quite, and the Gardener may leane a stemme or two, to shoot by into seede from yeare to yeare, for this hearbe will endure for euer, without any weeding at all. The planer may commit the seedes to the earth after the middle or end of Februarie, vnto the beginning of September: This hearbe hath the like vertue and properties, which the Parsley possesseth.

The Taragon of the garden, bearing seede like to the flaxe, ought to be bestowed in a well dunged earth, and after the plant be shot up to a foot high, the Gardener ought then to take by the whole bodies, and set them againe in the selfe same earth, which often water untill they haue taken strong roote in the earth. The Taragon enioyeth the like properties, as the Rocket, and may not be eaten a part or alone, but rather with the Lettuce, Parselanc, and such like hearbes.

The

The garden Cresses is a soure hearbe in taste like to the Ony-on, which the Germaines (in many places) do often vse in Sallets, but it seemeth that the hearbe is not eaten, without other cooling hearbes matched with it, as the Lettuce, Sorrel, Purselane, and such like, which temper the fire or burning force of the hearbe, even as the worthy Physician Galen hath willed it, who forbad the Rocket to be eaten without the Lettuce, that the contrarie hertue might be tempered. This hearbe ioyeth to be sowne in moist places, as by small ri- uers or running courses of water, Wells, and springs: for no other labour (after the seedes bestowed) do they require, sauing a dayly wa- tering, for the plants comming vp, desire oftentimes a day to be wa- tered by litle and litle.

The seedes of the Cresses (after the mind of Rutilius) bestowed in beddes with the Lettuce, increaseth bette well, for they lay in moisture, and hate the dung: and sowne in a shadowie place, in Fe- bruarie and March, the plantes reasonably prosper and come for- wards.

The Phisicke remedies and helpes both of the Cheruel and Garden Cresses.

The Cheruel heateth in the third degree, and dryeth in the se- cond, this hearbe of all persons is eaten raw with vineger, and in brothes boyled.

This hearbe taken in drinke, procureth vrine, and sendeth down the termes in women, brased with wine and drinke, mitigateth the griefes and witches in the side.

This drinke with water and honye, resolureth or looseth stowme, it putteth away grypings of the bellie, and engendereth winde.

The iuice of Cheruel taken with vineger, killeth wormes in the bellie, the Cheruel brought into powder, and mixed with ho- nye, healeth a Canker, being annointed vpon. The hearbe boyled in wine, and drinke, ceaseth the ache and griefe of the hippes.

The hearbe with the whole substance boyled, if the same be after mixed with vineger, & the head washed with the same, doth reme- die the

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

73

the bandie of the head. In the like maner ordered and applied, healeth running sores and Cankers.

It healeth the bite of a madde dog, if the person shall drinke of the Seede brused, and shall wash the wound with the same. The roote of Cheruill boyled with the Herbe Saxifrage, and drunke, breaketh the stone of the Bladder, and prouoketh vrine. The Cheruill boyled in wine, and drunk, dissoluethe the gathered blood into knobs, or otherwise clotted in the bodie.

The hearbe after the brusing, and tempering with ware and Barrotoes greafe, applied on impostumes behinde the Eares, doth in short time dissolue and heale them.

The Garden Cresses heateth and drieth in the thirde degree, but the learned Platearius affirmeth, that the Cresses to be hote and drie, in the fourth degree.

The seed especially serueth to the vse of Medicine, and is preserved in great efficacie, for fve yeares. The herbe greene, is of great efficacie, being somewhat dried.

The seed possesseth the vertue of beating and drying of superfluous humours, and in a maner enioyeth the like vertue of Mustardseed, the seede after the brusing drunke in wine, expelleth the dead yongling, drunke with wine, remooueth the swelling of the Throat, eaten with Honie, is a remedie for the cough, and loseth the breath, it awayloeth against the Swelling of the tong, if the seede chawed bee retained a time in the mouth.

It profiteth not if the Cresses be eaten alone, for that the same diminisheth mans strength, and engendreth euil humours, for this herbe ioyneth to bee bestowed in a moist Earth, and vnder a shadow from the Sunne.

The seed whole taken, restraineth the distillings of the head, without danger or harme, the seede brought to powder, and drawen vp by the Rosethilles, clenseth the vraine and helpeth the paynes of the head.

The seede of the Cresses helpeth against the paulsie, being boyled in wine, and applied hote in a bagge to the paulsie member, the powder of the seede blowen vp doeth cause the patient snale, amendeth the Letbargie or sleeping out of measure.

¶

The

The Seede boyled with dype figs, and a Gargill made of the same, doth send by and by the Vuula loose hanging.

Against infections of the head, knobs and dandrie, mire the seedes of the Cresses with Goose grease, and diligently brused, annoint all about sundry times, the powder of the seade annointed with Oyle of Roses, doeth stay the going forth of the fundament.

The seed drunke in wine, doth expell the noisome creeping things, as the round and flat wormes in the bodie, but forcibler by mints added thereto, this profiteth against the hardnesse of fetching wind, and the cough, with Dyanymixed and sweet wine, and the same diuers times drunk: the decoction of the hearbe in Goats milke helpeth the griefes of the bzeast: this amendeth the ache of the Hips, and grieve of the Loines, by annointing with Barlie meale and vineger mixed with it, on the griued places.

Certaine report, that the daily eating of the Cresses for a time, purchaseth a readier vnderstanding and quicker wit. The seeds after the bestowing into a bagge, boyled in wine, and applied on the flankes, doeth remooue the payne greuouously bearing, and lyke wise the Cholicke, applied on the bellye, proceeding of a colde cause.

For the selfe same, and for the strangury, doeth the simple hearbe boyled in wine and oyle preuaile, being applied vpon. For weaknesse of the kidneys, proceeding of a stennaticke matter disceding from the head, the raines of the back annointed with Honey, strew the fine powder of the seeds, with Cummine, and Colasonie.

A certaine practicioner reporteth, that the iuice of Cresses distilled or dropped into the Care, doth remoue and beliner the grievous pain of the teeth. The seed boyled in wine and drunke, and a plaister with figges applied without, doeth in short time allwage the swelling and grief of the Thill.

The

The commended vertues of the distilled waters, both of
the Cheruil and Garden Cresses.

The chosen time for the distilling of Cheruel, is when the hearbe
and roote, with the whole substance may be finely shred and di-
stilled, which time best answereth in the middle of May.

The water of Cheruel drunke, vnto the quantitie of foure ounces
at a time, both morning and euening, helpeth men bursten, and har-
med by a grieuous fall, and resolneth the blood clotted in lumps. The
same drunke, profiteth against the stone of the kidneys, a great quan-
titie of this drunke at one time loseth the bellie.

The water drunk (as aboue said) procureth a good stomack, confir-
meth and comfozteth the heart, putteth away the shaking of the fea-
uer, the same healthfull or profitable to the head, and comfozteth the
senses.

This like drunke, remoueth grieuous paines and prickings, hel-
peth the Lungs, and the diseases of the same.

The convenient time for the distilling of the Garden Cresses, is
in the ende of May, in a Win Lymbeck.

The water of Cresses auaileth against the Peaselles, and impo-
stumes behinde the eares, if the same mixed with Hony, be applied on
the places, with linnen clothes dipped in it, which being dyed, againe
moisten them, for this remoueth the red spots.

If the Peasels be on the legs, then let bloud on the Anckle of the
foote, and drink the same morning and euening mixed with strawbe-
ry water, and refraine after from all hote meats.

The water of Cresses drunk morning and euening, vnto the quan-
titie of foure ounces at a time, allwageth a swelling, and expelleth
woormes of the bellie, this mitigateth vlcers, and swellinges of the
gummes if they be often rubbed with it.

What care and skill is required in the sowing and ordering of the
Bucks horne, Strawberry, and Mustardseed.

Chapter 18.

The Buckes or Hartes horne, whose leaues be swéete in taste, and somewhat saultie, is at this day solwen in Gardens, and yearly bled in Sallets, and requireth a small labour, befoze the bestowing in the Earth, so; as much as this hearbe, so wel ioyeth in the earth not laboured and dressed, as afoze prepared.

But if the owner minde to haue the hearbe thicke tuft, and sayze to the eye, he must often clippe the toppes of the leaues, and presse the head downe by some waight, or properly treade with the fote on it: so; on such wise handeled will the hearbe be procured to grow downward and into a breadth.

This especially in Sallets in the sommer-time, although the same haue no apt sauoure nor taste.

The Strawberies require small labour and diligence in the bestowing in the Earth, sauing that these ioy to be sette in some shadowie place of the garden, in that these rather desire to growe vnder the shadow of other hearbes, than to be planted in beddes alone, and planted vnder the shadow of high trees, these prosper without any trimming of the Earth.

Here note a maruellous innocencie in y Strawberies, that although these creep low by the earth, and that diuers venemous things creep oner the hearbes, yet are these in no maner infected with any venemous contagion, which is a note, that the herbe (of propriety) hath no affinitie with poyson. This hearbe by diligence of the Gardener, becommeth so great, that the same yeeldeth faire and big Beries, as the Beries of the Bzemle in the hedge. and hereof it seemeth, that Virgilianus Seruius named the Strawberry, the Pulbery of the Earth. Certaine skilfull men, by a diligence and care, procure the Beries to alter from the proper red colour, into a faire white delectable to the eye.

The Mustard seedes desire to bee solwen in a fatte graunde, and to be committed to the Earth with fine powder dust, both befoze & after the winter, these after the comming vp require to be often weeded
and

and watered. But the seedes may not be sowe too thicke, in that the plants multiply and spread into breadth. After the plants haue enioyed strong roote in the earth, they are hardly plucked vp by the rootes, and the seedes may well be kept for five yeares, which the newer they be, so much the better to sow, and to be eaten. The goodnesse of the seede is known in the breaking or cracking of it betwene the teeth, whether the same be found greene or white within: for if this be white the seed is olde and nothing worth, neither to sow, nor to eat. The seedes which the owner would keepe for to eat, those plants must be remoue, after certaine leaues sprung vp, and set them a good distance a sunder, whereby the tops may bush and spread the broader, but such plants which the owner would haue runne vp to seede, those may bee not chaunge, nor remoue out of the proper places.

The Phisicke remedies and helpes of the Buckes horne, Strawberie, and Mustardseede.

The Hartes horne hath the propertie of heating and drying, for which cause taken in drinke, it ceaseth the grying of the bellie, yea this vned, helpeth the griefes of the topntes, strengthneth and expelleth the euil matter in them.

This hearbe after the minde of Dioscorides, hath the propertie of binding, so that the same be profitably giuen in red wine, for the perillous flixes.

Certaine report that if foure rootes of the Buckes or harts horne, be either diligently hanged about the necke, or bound to the pulses of both the hands, that these in short time, do put away the feuer, or at the least, moisture the heat or burning of the feete.

The Berries as well as the hearbe of the Strawberie haue the vertue of cooling and moistning in the third degree, and the hearbe it selfe endureth not above a yeare.

Vigonius writing of the Strawberie lease affirmeth the same to be of a cold qualitie, especially, the twice of which hearbe mixed with the wine of Pomgranats, & a litle quantitie of Rose water, applyed on hote impostumes (both in the beginning & increase of them) doth maruellously helpe. The Berries eaten with white wine, and a litle

Suger, doth maruellously amend the hardnesse and swelling of the spleene, the selfe same doth the iuice of the Berrie, taken with hony, the leaues sundrie times vsed in a bath, is said to be most profitable against the stone. The leaues and roote orderly applyed, doe heale as well woundes as vlcers: these also procure the termes, stay the bloudie flire Dysenteria, and cause vyine, the decoction of the hearbe and roote dyunke, helpeth the inflammations of the Liuer, and cleanseth both the kidnepes and bladder.

If any shall be mightely molested with grienous ache and paines of the hips, let him take three or foure handfuls of the Strawberie leaues, and boyling them tender, sit in the bath, and rubbe the legs well (with the licour and leaues) from the nether part bpwarde: which done and thoroughly-dryed with a warme cloth, apply this ointment following, prepared after this manner: take of the ointment of Marsh Mallowes one ounce, vnto which mixe halfe an ounce of stone hony, and a dramme weight of ware, making thereof an ointment by a soft fire: this on such wise handled, not onelie amendeth the griefes of the hippes, and softeneth the matter hardened in them, but prouoketh vyine, applyed on the proper place.

The decoction of the hearbe and roote, holden in the mouth, and washing or rubbing the teeth and gummes with it, doth not onelie strengthen the gummes and fasten the teeth, but staieeth the distillings from the head.

The Berries in sommer time, eaten with Creame and Suger, is accounted a great refreshing to men, but moze commended, being eaten with wine and suger, for on such wise, these maruellously coole and moisten chollericke stomackes or such being of a cholericke complexion,

The iuice of the Berries pressed forth, and the water of Plantaine added, of each eight ounces, to these mixe two ounces of Rosed honye, one ounce of the iuice of the Mulberries, of white Craike pitch and the flowers of the Pomegranat, of each a dramme waight, these after a diligent beating and mixing together, wash and gargell the same in the mouth sundrie times, for this in short time remoueth and putteth away the impostumes of the throat. Among other commodities which the Berries yelde, the iuice or wine pressed forth of them, is

is a soueraigne remedie for the removing of the great rednesse, spots and red pimples, which happen on the face through the heat of the Liver, the selfe same alwayeth & putteth away the rednesse of the eyes, the spots and hote distillings from the heade, by dropping it sundry times into the eyes. The decoction of the roots & leaues of the Strawberie in wine is marvellous profitable for the Jaundise, being taken diuers mornings fasting. The decoction only of the root taken, doth mitigate the heate of the liver, so that the same be drunke in the morning, and at noone: the hearbe eaten with vineger & a litle white pepper, doth greatly helpe such fetching the wind short: the Berries also eaten, do cease & coole thirst, for which cause profitable to the stomack, but these especially commodious to the cholerike. The Mustard seed heateth & dryeth in the fourth degree, and it is like to the Rape seede, sauing that the Rape seede is bitter, and the Mustard seed soure. The goodnes of the mustard seede is known in the breaking of it, which if the same be moist & white within (although new gathered) yet profitable to vles. This hath the vertue of heating & ripening. The force & nature of the Mustard seed, is to heate, extenuate, and draw forth, as the worthy Dioscorides reporteth. The Mustard seeds bruised with the fresh roote of Enula Campana, and applyed on impostumes, breaketh them without paine: the seeds bruised and tempered with vineger applyed on the bit of a venemous beast, doth speedely cure the same. The seeds chewed & retained vnder the tongue, preuaile against the palsey of the tongue, the seeds do like profit against all the kindes of palseys, hapning in any part of the bodie, if a linnen bag filled with the seeds, and boyled in wine, be applyed on the grieued place, being especially vled in the beginning of the infirmitie. The seeds after the bruising with cummin and figs eaten sundry mornings, doth deliuer and helpe the droppe, the seeds after the mixing with water and honny sundry times gargelled, amendeth the blistering or sores of the mouth, and alwayeth the swelling of the throat. The iuice of the mustard seed, taken diuers mornings fasting, doth procure a good memorie, the oyle drawne out of the seeds, is a soueraigne ointment for the cold Colicke, Sciatica, and feeblenes of sinewes. The iuice of the mustard seede dropped into the eyes, doth remoue the dimnes of sight, and put away the spots and web in them, yea this in the eating causeth thirst, and procureth the venereal act.

The

The second part of

The person which euerie morning fasting, shall swallow downe two seedes at a time, shall be free that day from the falling sicknesse, the seedes boyled in wine, and drunke, amendeth the hardnesse of fetching breath: the powder of seedes drawne vp by the nostrils, not onely procureth the creature to sneese, but maruellously purgeth and amendeth the braine.

If a like waight of the Mustard seede, Bellitorie and Ginger bee brused, and after the well mixing with rosed hony, the mouth bee washed with the same, and this for a good whiles holden in the mouth, both maruellously cleanse the braine of euil humors, of which the grievous paine of the head most commonly succeedeth. The same also amendeth the falling of the Vuulla, and blcers of the throat.

The Mustard seed, (as Dioscorides writeth) eaten, draweth down and purgeth by the mouth, the fluxe gathered in the head: the iuice of the hearbe mixed with water and hony, gargelled and holden a whiles in the mouth, both remoue the hard knobs and swellings of long countenance of the Jawes, the powder blowne or drawne vp by the nose, to procure the creature sundrie times to sneese, not onely profiteth such a one hauing the falling sicknesse, but amendeth the inflammation of the matrice, and falling out of place. And against the dullnesse of the head, and often sleeping, (the head afoze shaven) is the ointment or plaister of the seedes profitably applyed: the decoction of the Mustard seede in wine, holden in the mouth for a whiles, doth cease the ach and paine of the teeth comming of cold, and drunke, breaketh the stone in the bladder, and procureth the Vermes.

The person which coueteth to prepare a cleare voice to sing, ought to take the meale of Mustard seed, and after the working of it with hony, to make litle balles of the same, and of these to take one euerie day, which on such wise bled, will procure in short time a cleare voice.

The comended vertues of the distilled waters both of the Strawberry, and plant of the Mustard seede.

The best time for distilling of the Berry is, when they are neare ripe, yet that they be not ouer ripe and soft, which after the gathering

ring and sprinkled ouer with Sugar, ought so stand close couered in a glasse, untill they appeare mouldie, befoze the distilling in Balneo Mariz. The berries which grow in woods standing on hills, are better commended to vse.

The water of the berries drunk, and mixed with the same, amendeth an euill of the naturall heate, and ceaseth thirst, proceeding of the liuer, of the Galler: the water drunk vnto ʒ quantity of foure ounces at a time, both morning and euening, not only coleteth the liuer, looseth the breast, refresheth the heart, purgeth the blood, and helpeth the kings euill, but preuaileth against the Stone, of the Loines, Kidneys, and Bladder.

The like quantity drunk, profiteth against blisters and sores in the mouth, the vlcers and swellings in the throat, and strong sauour of the mouth, proceeding of the gummes and teeth, if this water also be gargelled in the mouth and throat.

The water in like order drunk of women, purgeth them, & procureth the Termes. The water drunk vnto the quantity of foure ounces at a time, both morning and euening, (or at the least in the morning) and linnen clothes dipped in it, being applied twice a day to the leg broken, doth in short time recouer and help the same.

The water healeth al foule legges, if after the daily washing both morning and euening, linnen clothes wet in it, bee applied vpon: this in like maner cureth filthy woundes, if they shall bee washed with the same, or if any shall vse of the water in his drink, this water also aswageth the swelling of the face, by the often washing with it.

The water drunk morning and euening, vnto the quantity of foure ounces at a time, with an ounce of pure Aqua vitæ, helpeth (no doubt) the Lepzie, in that this drinke purgeth blood, by the sundry times vsing, or otherwise a white tolke of breade, after the wetting with this be eaten fasting, which on such wise vled doth remooue the foule scurffe and scabbes on the body.

The water after the well tempering with Sugar, distilled ouer againe in Balneo Mariz, is very soueraigne for diuerse purposes, in that the same not only coleteth, cleareth, and remooueth spots of the eyes, but comfozteth nature, expelleth poisons, prouoketh ʒ Termes, aswageth burning humours, and comfozteth conception: yea, this

is a most effectious ointment for the eyes, in that the same stayeth teares or watering of the eyes, cooleth the great heate in them, and restoreth a dimme sight.

This water also applied sundry times with a linnen cloth wet in it, doth maruellously coole and put away the red pimples and redness of the face, yea and cleareth the same contrarie to hope.

The vertues commendable of the distilled water
of the Strawberry leaues.

The apt time for the distilling of the hearbe in either Balneo Mariz or a Lin Limbeck is in the middle of May. This water drunk vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, both morning and euening doth remoue and helpe the kings euill.

The water in like order drunk loseth the breast, purgeth the Lungs, helpeth the cough, and clenseth the Lepre. The water dropped into the eyes both morning and euening, doth remoue the redness of the eyes, and mittigateth the heate in them.

The water like drunk, ceaseth the ouermuch sweating, and for the heate and stopping of the Liner, there is nothing more healthfull and profitabler.

The whole hearbe bearing stowe of the Mustard seede, after the finely shredding, ought to be distilled in a Linne Limbecke, in the beginning of June. The water amendeth the vlcers of the gummes, if the same be holden a while in the mouth, and the gummes often washed therewith. This water helpeth vnto the consumption of members, if they be bathed and rubbed with the same: for the members thorough the same, do reconer in short time strength and flesh. This water heateth the marrow in the bones, if they be often rubbed with the same, and the water to dye in alone. This water profiteth against the cold disease and ach of the ioynts, if they be often rubbed with the same, and the water suffered to dye in by it selfe.

what

VVhat skill and care is required in the sowing and
workmanly ordering of the Leekes and
Ciues. Chap. 19.

The Leke for that it is a roote of the Garden to be eaten and often bled in the pottage, therefore I will first entreate of the same, which (as the most skilfull report) desireth to be sown in a fruitfull and battell place, and lying especially open, whether the same be in a low place, as the worthy Rutilius writeth, and to these, that the beddes be leuelled, deepe digged, diligent-ly turned, and very well dunged. The husbandmen in times past, noted two kindes of this herbe, as the one which grew into a head, like the Onion, and the other into many diuided blades, both long and straight, whose bush springing vp, is wont to be cut neare to the ground, and this with vs named the vnset Leke. The owner or Gardiner which would possesse vnset Leekes, ought to cutte the greene blades come vp in the beddes, after two monethes of the sowing. For these (after the minde of the learned Columella) will endure the longer, and encrease farre bigger, if after this cutting they be remoued and set againe, and how often the greene blades shalbe cut, so often the herbe is holpen with water and new Cow dung. And vse instructeth euery carefull owner as the said Authour reporteth, that in the remouing, such skill must be vfed for the new setting, as when they be growen into a bignes in the head, to be remoued certaine distances asunder, as foure fingers breadth betwene eyther set, and when they shalbe growen to a further strength & bignesse, to be againe cutte. The Leekes ought so often to be watered, dunged, and weeded, as neede requireth the same, & the place is to be often raked ouer, whereby the plants may encrease the better, through the helpe of the often killing & casting forth of the vnprofitable herbes or weeds. As touching the Cines & vnset Leekes, they may like be beset in the earth, as the Leke bearing the head: And the seedes of these may be committed to the earth at any time, if so be the owner forreth not for the yeelde of the seedes, but they otherwise ought to be sown in the Monethes of December, Januarie and Februarie, for the gathering and occupying after the Moneth of March, vnto the middes of August. And the plants after the sowing, when the blades be well shotte vp, ought lightly to be troden downe

¶ 2.

with

with the soote, and not to be watered for foure daies after. When the yong and tender blades be shot out of the seedes, and that the owner mindeth to haue the heads grow big, he ought not after the pulling vp to set them againe, before all the small rootes be cut away, and th: greene blades nigh halfe cut off, which done, y small potshardes, or opsthershelles, be laide (as it were) right vnder ech head, and then diligently couered with earth, whereby the heads may so increase y bigger, in the which doing, the worthy Greeke Sotion forbiddeth the watering of them till foure dayes after (if a drought ensue) otherwise water them not at all. The skilfull Peapolitane Rutilius instructeth, that when the Leakes be growne to a finger bignesse, by cutting the blades halfe away, and the heary rootes quite (least these seedes and draue away of the substance) then in the setting in earth mixed with sand and annoynted fresh with Cow dung, let the plants bee distant in beds well foure or fine fingers one from the other, & when these haue sent forth rootes sufficient long, let the owner (gently putting vnder his Dible) raise softly the heads, that these remaining (as hanging in the earth) may on such wise fill the rowes or empty spaces by the greatnes of the heads growing. And that in fewer words I vtter this instruction, if so be the owner would enioy vnlet leakes, he may bestowe the Seedes in beddes the thicker together. If these to growe into a head, then the thinner in the earth, and shall cause them to prosper the better th:ough a daily weeding, and seeding with freshe Cow-dung.

The seedes ought to be committed to the earth, in the moneths of Aprill, May, and June throughout, to possesse the hearbes in the Sommer time, in the haruest, September, and October, for to enioy the plants in the Winter time, but these especially requyre, to be often weeded and dunged, which grow into heads: the Leake shall yeld a far bigger head & stem, as after Columella Rutilius wrote: yea before them both the worthy Greeke Sotion, if in thinne linnen clouts, or clothes much worne, the owner shall bestow & tye vp many Seedes together, which so handled, to couer diligently with softe dung and earth, and immediatly to water them so lying in the earth, for these thus knit vp (th:ough the running of the Seedes into one) will send forth Leakes of a woonderfull bignesse, which practise also may the busbandly Gardiner trye in the other seedes of plants.

A like

A like experience will come to passe, if the owner bestow a Rape seede into the head of a Leeke, with out making a hole, with any Iron instrument, which so handled, set into the earth, so; on such will it grow very big, as both Rutilius & diuers Greeke instructors of husbandry report. There be some, which making holes in the head with a wooden picke, or piece of Elder Cane, or els Keede sharpened, bestow (in place of the Rape) the Courd seedes. Others there are, which taking vp so many seedes as they can handsomely retain with three of the fingers, and poured into a thinne Keede, doe commit those to the earth, with soft dung couered and laide about which practise doth euen like agree, to the former vttered.

The sayd Greeke Sotion commendeth and affirmeth, that immediately after the seedes shall be sowne, the soft earth of the Beddes, be troden with the feete into small and shallow furrowes, and the Beds so; three dayes (as if they were neglected) not watered at all, but in the fourth day, to be holpen through the sprinkling of water on the Beds, so; such wise handled, the blades comming vp, will grow (as he reporteth) the more bushie and sayzer to the eye, yet if the owner, betwene the sowing and planting, shall mixe sand with the earth, the Blades will shoote vp the fuller and bigger.

The sayd worthy Greeke Sotion addeth and affirmeth, that if the owner shall eate a litle Cummyne seede before, he shall breath forth no stinking saour at all of the Leeke, although he shall eate a great handfull at a time of the Leekes, so; by eating of the Cummyne seede is the strong saour extinguished or put away.

Here out of Petrus Crescentius I haue added, as a matter worthy of the noting, that the Leeke seede thrown into a vessell of wine, causeth that the wine sowreth not, but rather that vineger returneth into wine, that is, putteth away all the egerneesse.

This to conclude conceyue, that the Leeke in the eightenth day after the sowing, to shoote and appeare (so; the more part) aboue the earth, and to indure so; ten yeares, after which time to yelde seedes, and dye.

¶ The

The Lecke, after the minde of the auncient, heateth in the third degree, and dryeth in the second, especially, the Garden Lecke whose seedes may well indure to purpose, for two yeares.

The worthy Greeke Sotio (of whom we haue afore mentioned) uttereth, in his singular precepts and instructions of husbandry, that the Lecke, by used and applyed, to cure the bit of a venemous beaste, sooner than any other Medicine, and the seede of it drunk with the licour of Railons, to recouer and help the difficulties of making water.

To these, to help and stay the long and olde spitting bp of blood, if at conuenient times, in two drammes of the iuyce, with a like waight of the powder of Hyttill berries or Gaules, and the meale of Frankinsence the same be drunk.

But the singular Hippocrates willeth the iuyce to be ministred without any myxture at all, and forbiddeth the daily, or too much eating of Leekes, in that this not only harmeth and bulleth the sight of the eyes, but offendeth the stomack which shall be procured the lesser harinesfull, if so be the Lecke shall so long be boyled, untill it become as soft (in a maner) as pap, for on such wise handled, the same is supposed no lesse to nourish than flesh.

The iuyce of the raw Lecke is recited and accompted (with Plinie) among the venemous matters: for the report is, that Mela (a man of worthy Birth) accused and sharplie blamed of Tiberius for misusing of the office giuen to him of the prince, who after falling into mighty desperation, & drinking vnto the waight of thre silver pence of the iuyce of the Lecke, dyed immediatly without grieve of body. But such like are rather with silence to be overpassed, than opened for instruction sake.

But to returne to the phisike helps: the Lecke twice sodden before the eating, draweth downe the Vermes, procureth vrine, and stayneth a superfluous heate: the iuyce of the Lecke mixed with vinegar, applyed on the forehead, stayeth the bleeding at the nose: the Lecke eaten raw causeth vomitting and is venemous, this also putteth alway druckenness, being eaten raw.

The iuyce of the Lecke taken with womans milke, amendeth an olde

olde cough, and the vlcers of Lungs: the Leeke brused and mixed with Salt, applyed on euill puches, healeth them: the Leeke brought into powder, and tempered with the oyle of Roses and vineger, and dropped into the eares, remoueth the griefes of them: the same also profiteth, in like maner applyed against the tooth ach.

The Leeke brused with honny, & applied, purgeth vlcers, a plaster made of the same, and applied on brused members, doth not onely aswage the swelling, but remoueth the blood clotted.

The iuyce of it drunk with womans milke, staieyth the flure of blood after byrth, the same also applyed with vineger, ceaseth the bleeding of the nose, if the fine powder of Frankinsence be added to it, and drawne by by the Nosethzels.

The iuyce of the Leeke drunk with honny, profiteth against paines or aches of the Hyppes, the iuyce of the Leeke taken with honny, recouereth all defaults of the breast and stomack, the same ceaseth an olde cough, and griefes of the breast and Lungs: and it helpeth the dropse, through the sundrie times taking fasting.

Here I will not omit the practise out of Galen, that the Leekes tartnesse may be abated, and to engender the lesse winde, if the same boyled in two waters, the colde licour in the ende be poured forth, & the herb eaten, by which meanes it is sayd, that this stayeth the fire of the belly, and to amend a hoarse voyce: yea, through the softnes of it, to make smooth the roughnesse of the iawes and mouth.

For to purchase a cleare and sounding voyce, Nero accustomed to eate the Leeke with Oyle, in certaine dayes of euery moneth, when he contended for the seignioritie of lowde pronouncing and uttering of wordes. At which times, hee only toke or eate nothing, sauing bread, as Plinie writeth of him, which reporteth this to be ment of the vnset Leeke, to which the prince Nero attributed a singular commendation.

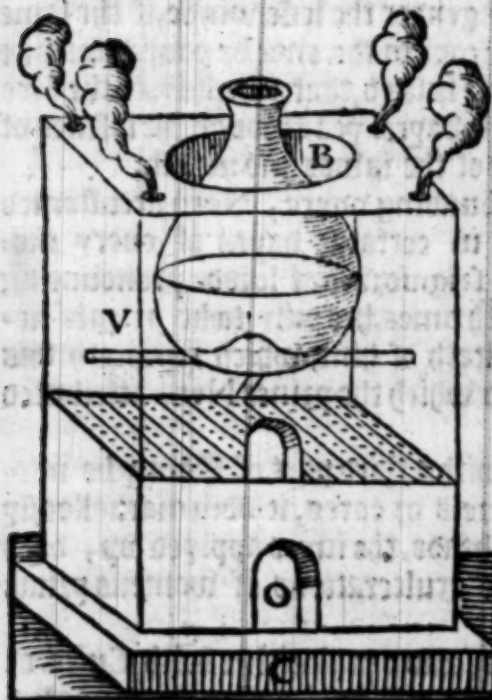
If two partes of the iuyce, with a third part of Honny be mixed, and applyed into the Nosethzels or eares, it doth maruellously help the greuous paynes of the heade, the iuyce applyed by, doth maruellously ppcuayle against the exulcerations of womens priuie places.

The seedes of the Leeke brused, and drunk either with Cuite or pleasant white wine, doth loose the difficulties of making water,
and

and openeth the small passages: the iuyce of the Leke drunk with wine, doth aide so, ward the deliuey of childen; the Leke seedes, after the brusing with Pyre in the iuyce of Plantain, is very soueraign fo; the spitting of blood, and stayng the bleeding of the nose.

The iuyce of the Leke powred on such wounds, which are become colde and putrified, doth both cleanse away the rotten flesh, and cureth the woundes: if the iuyce be mixed with the rootes of white Lillies and annoynted warme on the hips, it doth speedely remove the ache of them: the fresh iuyce applied with salt on newe cuttes o; woundes, doth incontinent close them.

The learned Dioscorides reporteth, that the Leke moueth & prouoketh the veneriall act, the same with honny, in forme of an Eclegma, sucked o; suffered to melt downe, cleanseth and amendeth all defaults of the breast, the same like used, recovereth the wasting of the Lungs: yet the Leeke often, and much at a time used, doth burden the stomack, procureth thirst, and inflameth the blood.



The commended helps of the distilled water of the Leeke.

The roote only of the Leeke, being shzed, is to be distilled in a Lyn Lymbecke, in the month of Iune.

The water drunke vnto the quantity of two ounces at a time, both morning and evening, is a soueraigne remedy fo; the spitting vp of cold blood: this also is auaylable, being sundry times drunk, fo; a barraine woman.

The water of the Leeke, stayeth bleeding of the nose, if cotton dopped in it be often applied: the same drunk amendeth a collyre belly, and ache of the hips, purgeth the kidnies and bladder, procureth vyne, & expelleth the stone.

The

The water speedily healeth woundes, if they be washed morning and euening with the same, this also profiteth vnto the exulceration and fracture of womens places, which is wont to happen after the deliuey of childe, if so be the places be washed with the water, both morning and euening.

What skill and diligence required in the workmanly sowing
and ordering of the Onyon.
Chap. 20.

That the Onyons haue a body compassed and compact with many cartilagies, there is none (I beleue) which knoweth not.

The auntient husbandmen (as witnesseth Columella) named these Onyons, because they grewe in one round head together, yet not ioyned together with so many heads round about, as the garlike, which vnto this day is familiarly named the Onyon of the husbandmen with vs.

The Onyons for the moze part ought to be sown in the moneths of January, February, and Marche, in a fat earth, well dunged, moist, and diligently trimmed, which shot vp to some heighth, ought to be removed in the moneth of Aprill, a good distance the one from the other, and these further growne, ought carefully to be weeded about, and often laboured to cause them growe the bigger, and to defend them (in time of a blustering winde) by helps set against. The worthy Neapolitan Rutilius writeth that the seedes desire to be bestowed in a fat earth, often turned and raked, moist and dunged, and red also, as the Greeke Sotion in his husbandry willett: which afore ought to be cast vp, that it may putrify through the colde and frostes in the Winter time, (as the skilfull Columella uttereth) after these the earth to be dunged, and within two dayes after, the ground leuelled forth, and cast as trodden into beds, all the rotes and vnprofitable hearbs afore clenched out. These workmanly handled in the moneth of Marche, being a calme and pleasaunt day, the South or East winde (at that time blowing) the seedes shall workmanly be committed to the earth, with Saueie intermedled betwene them (as Plinie willett) for so the plants prosper the better. The wor-

the Greeke Sotion admonisheth the Gardiner which would set Onions, to cut away all the beerie rootes and toppes of the greene blades (before the bestowing) whereby they may grow to big heads. Others there are, which onely plucke away the blades nigh to the roote, for on such wise they send the iuyce to the nether partes, to cause the head grow bigge: But these (after the mind of Rutilius) ought in this maner to be placed or set thinne in beddes, and both raked and weeded (if these not often) yet foure times at the least, as Plinie willeth: who also taught, that the ground be digged, and cast vp threec times before the bestowing of the seedes in the earth.

If the Gardiner commit seedes to the earth in the wane or decrease of the Moone, he shal possesse small and sourer ones, if the seedes in the increase of the Moone, then strong and bigge, and of a moyster taste, with the sourenesse maystred. But the same not to be vntremembred nor ouerpasse, that in all the kindes of Onions, the same some what long and sharpe; is wont to bee sourer then the round, and the redde one more then the greene, and the raw more then the boyled, the fresh also, more then that seasoned or powdered with salt, or the sodden one.

The Gardiner or owner shal possesse farre greater Onions, if when there is a place or roome for the setting againe, they be layed in earth well laboured for twentie dayes space, and so long left drying against the sunne, vntill all the moysture be gone or drawen forth by heate of the sunne, after the instruction of the worthy Greeke Sotion, which Ruellius (out of Palladius) seemeth greatly to mistake, in that he ascribeth the same to be done to the Dill, and not the Onions, whose heads may also be hard, by plucking off the upper skinne, before the setting againe in the earth, to prosper the better, and yeelde the bigger seedes, if they be set in the earth well a hand breadth a sunder.

The heads to be eaten before the full ripenesse, that these may be the sweeter, ought rather to be sown in a moyst ground, among the young Plants of the Cucumbers, Gourdes and Melones.

If the owner will rightly possesse, and gather the seedes in due season: when the greene stemmes are shot vp high, and yeelde bigge heads, they are then to be guided with two small forks of wood, fixed

fired on eitherside (as Columella willeth) that the stems, through the staves, shoring them vp right, may not in any bigge winde, knocke the heads together, to the spilling and losse of the seedes on the earth, which are not also to be gathered, that they inioy a blacke colour, as after the Greekes Columella, and Rutillius like vttered.

The stemmes and knops, in which the seedes are contained, ought to be gathered in the decrease of the wane of the Mone, in a faire and warme time, when the leaues or blades begin of themselves to wither and dye, and that the seedes beginne to appeare blacke of themselves, for then ought the stemmes to be plucked by the rootes, which knit together in forme of garlands, or other wise bound vp, to be laid in the Sunne to dye and ripen. The Onyons will continue long vncorrupted (as the sayd Sotion hath noted) if so the Onions be put into hot water, or (as Plinie willeth) into saltie and warme water, and after layed in the hotte sunne, untill they be thorough dry, which let be hidde or couered with Barly straw, and in such maner bestowed, that nether touch other by any part. In many places, the Onyons be hanged in the smoke and in Chimnies nere to the heate of the fire, and on such wise preserue them a long time.

The ancient and skilfull writers of husbandrie vtter, that if the Gardiner would possesse Onyons of a wonderfull bignesse in the head, the seedes of the Onyons put within the seedes of Gourdes, which so handled, bestow in moyst beds, well turned in with dung, into a like bignesse, will the heads of the Onyons increase, if the earth digged round about, the small heads of the Onyons, in the heauing or lifting of the earth, shall be lifted vp, yet in such maner done, that the heads not quite raised out of the earth or plucked by the rootes, as I also vttered to be wrought with the Leke. The like also shall the owner obtaine, if boaring the head of an Onyon, with a wooden pricke, in sundry places, and putting into the holes Gourde seedes, he bestow them together in a well laboured earth.

But in this place I thought not to omit, that if the Gardiner shall commit the seedes of the Onyons in due time to the earth, they will after grow into a head, but they shall yelde lesse store of Seede. But if the Gardiner shall bestow litle heads in the ground, the heads will after wither and waie dye, and be shotte vp into a round stemme.

To these I adde, that the Onyons plucked out of the ground and lying vpon the earth, or hanged vp in ropes, doe continue longer sound in the ayre, but it woe may credit. Aristotle in the Sommer Solstice, these, as the Penny-royall, and many other hearbs, doe at the same time flourish, wh ch may be as if they were of a doubtfull life, that one while taking nourishment out of the earth, and an other whiles from the ayre. But the Onyons lightly bud & shote out, not bring in the earth, and send forth sayre greene blades by occasion of the moisture in the heades, but after the stemme shall bee full shot out, the heades wyther.

To which Plinie wote, that the Ruts bee contrarie, in that these doe abate the strong saour of the Onyon. I reade that many skilfull Gardiners vied to sow the Onyons and Carlike neare to Carland flowers (but especially the Rose) to procure them to peebe a sweeter saour, and the same done by the counsell of the auntient and y worthy Plinie, which in my opinion, deserueth to be followed.

Truely, this one thing is greatly to be marvelled at, that the Onyon alone of all hearbs, as Plutarch writeth, receiveth no damage of the Moone, and hath contrary vertues of encreasing and diminishing to hir: for the Onyon becommeth greene and buddeth forth in the wane or last quarter of the Moone, contrariwise the encreasing of Light, the Onyon then wythereth and rotteth.

For which cause, the Egyptian Priests in time past, refused the Onyon in their Religious meates, where otherwise, Fruites, Pearbes, Trees, and Beastes, receyue a damage or diminishing and increasing through the occasion of this Starre, so that the Onyon onely obeyeth vnto the contrary turnes of the Moone, whose preserving vnto the Winter time, Columella prepared after this manner, hee chose the Onyon or Scalpones (that are all a like) which bee not budded forth, or that greene blades appeared, and these dyed afoze in the hote Sunne, after which cooled againe in the shadowe, by strewing vpon Tyne or Sawozie, he then laide them by courses, with eyther of these strowed between in an earthen pot, and by powring the Licour vpon, which was three parts of vinegar, and one of Wine: he strowed then a good handfull of Sawery (in such maner) that the Onyons were couched or pressed vnder the Licour, which when they had drunk vp the Licour, and seemed

to lye dry, bee powdered vpon and filled the bestell with the like mixture, and in an apt place set the pot to preserve them to vse.

This one thing I will not omit, although the same may seeme childish, in that it is noted by the learned man Caro, who writeth, that the letters be adone and written with the iuyce of the Onyon, are inuisible, which then shew and appeare evidently, when the paper shall be heated at the fire: to conclude, the Onyons set in the middle of August in a red earth, doe yield the yeare following theyr high stremes and seeds, but the woiser will those bee, which are bestowed in the earth, to serue greene in the Lent time.

The phisike commodities of the Onyon.

Although the worthy Greeke Hippocrates more commended the sight, than the eating of the Onyon, saying that the same in sight to be good and in body euill, soasmuch as it is hote and burning: yet I purpose here to entreat somewhat of the phisick benefits of the Onyon, and of these, part faithfully gathered out of the Greeke, & part out of the latin Writers, as well Physicians, as cunning and most diligent searchers of husbandly secrets.

The Onyon hath the property of heating in the fourth degree, & of a grosser substance, as Galen witnesseth.

The Greeke Sotion (both husbandman and phisition) is Anthoz, that if any shall daily eate the tender Onyon fasting with honney, it shall maintaine the continuance of health: the sayd Anthoz reporteth besides, that the same recouereth & cureth vlcers: to these, that it remooueth the foule spots on the body, being diligently rubbed with it in the Sunne, and to profit the eyes running, by dropping the iuyce into them. The same annotated, helpe the swellings in the throat, and these rolled under hote embers, and eaten with Oyle, doe help the cough.

The Onyon after the roasting eaten with honny, doth remove the griefe of an euill stomack: the Onyon eaten rawe harmeth the members, in that it too much drieth the moisture of the body: the Onyon also eaten rawe procureth a rough throat, and swelleth the stomack: the Onyon notwithstanding applien with vineger on Wiles, doth in short time open them: the iuyce of the Onyon is profitably annotated

with honny for the clearing of the eyes, and both remoueth the pin and webbe, and amendeth the blood-shotte eyes, the iuyce annointed on a bald place, recovereth the haire shed away.

There be which affirme, that the greene Onyon applied with vinegar doth help the bite of a mad dog within three dayes, but I rather suppose that the iuyce added with Rue, Salt, and honny, & after the beating together workmanly applied, to performe the same: the often eating of the Onyon, harmeth ϕ Cholericke, by procuring them hotter and drier in stomack: but this is to great purpose vnto the stomaticke, in that it cutteth a sunder, and consumeth the superfluous humours in them.

The Onyon roasted in embers, and applied with barley meale doth stay the dropping of the eyes, & help the vlcers of the priuities: the iuyce besides dropped with womans milke into the eares, is sayd to amend the paine and noyse of the eares. Which also many haue giuen to persons sodainely swollen, by the drinking of water: and they haue prosperously giuen the Onyon, to such as are molested with the perillous fluxe Dysenteria: and these applied, haue maruellously profited the griefes of the Loynes, and the iuyce of them with the iuyce of Fennell, expelleth and helpeth the water beginning betwene the fleshe and skinne, which together with the Rue, and honny, recouereth the doloure right lumbering and sleeping, and with Raisons or Figs, applied on impostumes, both ripeneth and speedily openeth them.

The Onyons after the roasting vnder hote embers eaten both morning and euening, not onely help the paines of the brest, but cause an easie spitting vp of grosse humours, and purge the stomacke: the Onyon after the mixing with Honny and Salt, applied on wartes, doth make them speedily fall off, euery by the rootes.

If the Onyons be often vled through their sharpnesse, they ingender in the stomacke euill humours, procure thirst, swellings and windinesse: yea, cause head-ach, and to become foolish, through the fumositie of them, ascending to the head, and harne the Brayne: for which cause, the daily and too often vling hindres reason, & procures terrible dreames, if so be a weake person newly crept out of sickness, shall much eate of them, but especially rabie, in that these giue no nourishment to the body.

I adde out of Galen, that if the Onions shal be twice sodden, ech water separated, and in the third water boyled, to giue a very good nourishment to the eater, being boyled with fat flesh, and other pleasant spices added, yet are they weaker than the greene in working, although the euilnesse of the iuyce no longer remayning, no: felt.

The raw Onyon moderately vsed, according to the rule of physick, heateth and cutteth a sunder grosse and clammy humours, openeth the waies of the baines, prouoketh the Termer & vrine, and increaseth the appetite, the iuyce also drawne by by the Nosethysels, or the sauor receiued by the Nose, purgeth inuicellously the head.

The Onyon is better commended to be eaten, than the sauour allowed, in that the person which daily eateth of the pong and tender Onyons with Honny fasting, shall continue a longer time in perfect health and strength.

The iuyce remoueth the white spots as well on the face, as body, the iuyce applied with Venues grease, healeth the kybes, galling of the heeles by a straight shoue: the iuyce mixed with Vens grease and annointed, remoueth the red and wanne spots of the face, the Onyon brused with vineger, and annointed on scabbed places, both healeth and causeth a clare skinne: the Onyons after the boyling in wine or water, fried in Oyle, and in plaster forme vnder the nauell, aswageth the painefull gripings and sure, happening to women in child-bed: the Onions rolled vnder hole embers, and mixed with leuen and oyle of Lillies, & applied in plaster forme on impostumes, speedily breaketh and procureth them to runne.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of the Onions.

The most chosen and aptest time for the distilling of Onions, is in the first moneth of Waruest, so: then ought the rootes to be shzed, and workmanly distilled: this water drunk foure or five times vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, recouereth the swelling caused by the bite of a mad dog, or other beast: the same drawne by by the nosethysels, aswageth the grievous paine of the head: the water helpeth the ach and paine of the teeth, if they be either rubbed or washed with the same: this also causeth haire to growe in any bald place of the head, if the same be annointed with it: the drinking of the water expelleth woymes.

What

What are, full and secrets to be learned in the sowing and orde-
ning both of the lesser and greater Carlike. Chap. 21.

The Carlike much desired, and often eaten of y^e hus-
bandman, with fat beefe, and other scodden meates,
ioyeth in an earth especially white, diligently dig-
ged and laboured without any dung bestowed in it,
whose cloues broken off from the head, ought to be
bestowed on the borders of beds reynde about, well
a hand-breadth a sunder, about the same time when the Onions are:
and these with the beds or litle ridges made (in forme to such in the
fielde) to be high raised, whereby the plants comming vp may the
lesser be harmed with the howes falling, and the naturall moisture
consisting in the earth. The cloues set in the ridges and borders of
the beds may not be deepe, nor the earth rapped on them like to hil-
locks (as many do) but in an euen maner, & vnto the middle ioyntes
bestowed, which whē they shall haue yēldeed or sent vp threē blades,
then these to be diligently weeded about, for though the often doi-
ing they encrease the better, and yēlde a bigger head.

The Neapolitan Rutilius (writting of the Carlike in his instru-
ctions of husbandry) willeth that the seedes to be committed to the
earth in the moneths of Nouember, Deceniber, Januarie, and Fe-
buarie, in a ground well digged and laboured, and the same white,
without any dung bestowed in it, besides the earth the same time
indifferent dry, and in a warme day, for the seedes on such wise han-
dled, are caused to prosper and yēlde the better. Although the lear-
ned Plinio seemeth to write that the seedes bestowed in the earth do
slowly come vp, whereby these in the first yeare, onely yēlde a head
no greater than a Leek, but in the second yeare, they grow denided,
and in the third yeare come to their full growth and perfection, and
such some suppose to be the sayzer and semelier.

The seedes of the Carlike with vs, better agree to be bestowed in
the moneths of September, October, Februarie, & March, in a earth
white, indifferent dry, and well laboured without dunging. If any
happen to remaine in beds (as Rutilius reporteth) after y^e seedes full
ripe

ripe and gone, those then renew in the yeare following of the owne accord, both in the roote and blade, yea yeld seedes the same yeare, which may after bee sowen in well laboured beddes, to send forth greene Garlike. If the owner woulde possesse Garlike both great and bigge in the Heade, then befoze the same bee shotte vppe into a stemme, he must workemanly tye all the toppes of the greene blades to an other growing next to it, which after tread softly downe with the foote.

The woorthie Rutilius willet, that when the stemme beginneth to appeare, to couer the same with Earth after the treading downe, which in such maner to foyses, that it encrease not into a bushe or many blades, this so handled in the hard treading downe, to be daily applied that the iuice may run to the roote, and cause the head to waxe the bigger. The like of which Plinie in his time first experienced. The woorthie Sotion in his Greeke obseruations of husbandry: and also Rutilius with certain others report, that if the cloues of Garlike heads be committed to the earth, & the like pulled out of the ground, when the Mone shall be descending and vnder the Horizonte (as his to be) that the stinking sauour will in a manner be extinguished, so that the breath of the eaters, shal verie little be felt: which Plinie seemeth somewhat other wise to utter, instructing that the heades (vnto the same purpose) ought to be bestowed when the Mone shall be vnder the earth, and to be gathered when the Mone shall be in coniunction, or with the Sunne.

The said Greeke Sotion seemeth to affirme, that the Garlike heads may be caused to grow sweet of sauour, if in the setting the kernels of Olives (after the ioyning with them) bee bestowed together in the earth, or the sharper endes blunted on some stone, and then committed to the earth, or else in the setting, that lies of y Olives be bestowed with the cloues. The singular Didymus (Ruellius noting the same) uttereth, or rather Sotion (as the græke copy sheweth) y the lothsomnesse or stinking sauour by the eating of Garlike heads is abolished or put away, if the green and rawe Bean be sown after eaten. Others there are, which will the roote of the Beete to be eaten, after the roasting vnder hote embers, affirming the same to be sufficient to remoue the strong sauour: Also with the like remedy Menander one of y græke writers witnesseth, as Pliny writeth of him, y sauour to be dissembled

and hid. Our later writers of husbandry and Whiske report, that the ranck saour of Garlike may be extinguisht, with the onely eating of greene Parsly blades.

The commodiousest and apter time for gathering of the Garlike heads is in the decrease or wane of the Moone, the day being dry and faire, when the blades be withered, that they leane or hang downe.

Many of the auncient writers of husbandry utter, that the Garlike heads will indure a long time, & be to better purpose afterwards, if they be either hidde in chaffe, or after the tying together hanged vp in the smoke. There be others which after the infusion of the heads a while in warme salt water, and letting them dry, doe likewise hide them in the chaffe.

But the heads handled after either maner, doe for the mozt part remaine barren, or prosper not after the bestowing in the earth. No others it was sufficient to haue dried them ouer the beate of the fire, that they might after grow. The learned Plinie uttereth, that those heads of Garlike be of a sowier taste, which possesse the mozt cloues round about, and he addeth that no mozt lothsomnesse or strongnesse of saour doeth consist in them after the seething, than in the Onion like ordered. For he omitteth not, that the Garlike heads afore eaten, to be in feare of the white Pestilence for the Pioners, if they mind to auoide and escape the hazard of death. There is another wild Garlike, which the Grecks name Ophioscoridon, in English Ramsies, growing of the owne accord in the fallow fieldes, through which the Kines milke by feeding on the greene blades, is caused to saoure of the Garlike, yea the cheese made of the same milke, doth render in the eating the like ranknesse of saour. The husbandmen name this both the wilde and serpentine Garlike.

This Garlike on such wise boyled, that it may not growe againe, and bestowed on beds, doth greatly auaille against the harme of birds to Seedes, as afore is uttered in my first part, there writing, that the same of Plinie is named Alom. But here commeth to minde a maruellous matter, not to be ouerpasse, which is, that neither the Weasell nor Squirrell will after the tasting Garlike presume to bite anie foules, by which practise, Pullets and of her foules in the night being sprinkled ouer with the licoure of the Garlike may be defended from harme of either of these.

There

There is yet a matter moze woorthy the remembrance, & the same far marvellous, which Volateranus uttereth, that in his time happened a husbandman to sleep open mouthed in the field by a hey cocke, cast vp in the harvest time, which when he had unwittingly suffered an Adder to creepe into his bodie, with the eating incontinent of Garlike heads, was (as by a certaine preparation against poison) belivered, yet the venome and death of the Adder, consisting or remaining within the bodie distilled and shed forth in coeating, a matter to be marvelled at of the wise.

But this also is marvellous in the Garlike, that if it be boiled with a Salte lycoure, the same doeth effectuously destroy the mites or little woymes in either peason or beanes, so that the walles and fibres of the barnes be wet with this mixture. Here also I thought not to overpasse the marvellous disoord of the Adamant Stone and garlike, which the Greekes name to be an Antipathia or naturall contrarie, tie betwene them, for such is the hatred or contrarietie between these two bodies, (lacking both hearing and feeling) that the Adamant rather putteth away than draweth to it Iron, if the same afoze be rubbed with Garlike, as Plutarchus hath noted, and after him Claudius Ptolemæus. Which matter examined by diuers learned, and founde the contrarie, caused them to iudge, that those skilfull men (especially Ptolomie) ment the same to be done with the Egyptian Garlike. Which Dioscorides wrote to be small Garlike, & the same sweete in taste, possessing a bewtifull head, tending vnto a purple colour. There be which attribute the same to Ophioscorido, which Antonius Microphonius Biturix, a singular learned man, and well practised in sundry skilles, uttered this approued secrete to a friend whom he loved. And the same as last, shall here be placed, that diuers Garlike heads hanged on the branches of trees, doe drive far off birds from the spoiling of fruits, as the like Democritus noted in the greek instructions of husbandry.

That the big Garlike named of certaine skilful Authoers the Affrica Garlike, is of far bigger encrease, than the Garden Garlike with vs. Which the worthy Greek Sorion, Columella and Rutilius instruct, that the cloves to be broken from the head, and bestowed in a white ground, well laboured and dressed without any dung, and set in high ridges of beds, to the end the natural moisture of the earth, not shoures

falling

falling may offende.

The time commended for setting of the cloues, is in the moneths of January, February, and March, but some will bestow them in the earth, from the beginning of October, unto the ende of Nouember, well a hand breadth a sunder, and vnto the middle toynts, or rather a finger deepe in the earth, which growen vp to some heighth, to be often weeded about, and the earth diligently raked, whereby the plants may the better prosper.

These further growen vp, the skilfull teach, to tye the toppes of the blades, by two & two together, which done, to tread the blades downe with the fote, that the iuice by the same meanes may run to the roots to increase the heads bigger.

The other instructions needefully to be learned, may the owner conceine by the former taught of the garden Garlike, which for the Phisick benefits deserueth a place in euerie ground, especially in the husbandmans Garden.

The Phisick helps and commodities of the Garlike.

The learned Plinie seemeth to me, not to haue vnadvisedly written, that the Garlike doth serue vnto many bles in Phisicke, & to the husbandman especially is profitable, for which cause of sundrie it is rightly named, the husbandmans Triacle.

This (according to the agreement of the skilfull) heateth and drieth in the fourth degree, the Onion, Garlike, and Leke (as the skilfull Aegineta witnesseth in his first booke) indued with a soure vertue, doth heat the bodie, extenuate and cut the grosse humours in the same, yet the Cholerick ought to beware, & they doo not too often eate the Garlike, especially in the Sommer time and hotte seasons, for at suche times the Garlike inflameth and drieth the body, and increaseth both the red and adust Choller. The worthy Graeke Sotion (principall of the writers of husbandry) uttereth, that & garlike eaten with meat, or hanged against the region of the stomack, doth expell worms in & bodie, & applied in plaster to: me, preuaileth against & bite of either snake or adder. The heads burned & mixed with hony, and the same applied, doth remoue the black and blew spots, and cause a faire colour.

The

The Garlike eaten, putteth away the inward swelling of the bodie, softneth and openeth impostumes, and draweth forth matter, being afoze sodden, and applyed thereon.

If the head be annointed with the iuice of Garlike, it killeth both lice and nits. The Garlike also is drunke to great purpose, with the decoction of Drogany (as Dioscorides witnesseth) against lice and nits of the heade.

The heades eaten do moue vrine, and are supposed to amend the defaults of the kidneys: and a cloue holden in the mouth, ceaseth the toothach, proceeding of a colde cause.

The ashes of the Garlike heades, after the mixing with hony, annointed, stayeth the shedding of haire, in the same maner vled, amendeth the defaults or spots of the skinne. If the ashes be strewed on soule vlcers, which are open, it speedely cureth them.

The ashes of the heades, after the diligent mixing with hony and May butter annointed, doth in short time remoue the soule scabs, and Leapyle, and cleareth the skinne, if the same be dayly exercised in the bath or hote house.

The Garlike tenderly sodden and eaten, procureth a cleare voice, and recovereth an old cough, and correcteth the stomacke cooled, the same mightely dyeth by the moisture of the stomacke.

If any shall afoze eate of the Garlike, he shall not be endamaged by the bit of any venomous worme or Serpent, the Garlike byused and applyed on the bit, doth speedely cure it.

And the same in these maruellous (as writeth the skilfull Serapio) that although the heades eaten, doth helpe the sound sight of the eyes, yet do these comfort and relieue the dulnesse of sight, through the moisture consisting in them. The boyled heades eaten with oyle and salt, doe cure the mattering and breaking forth of wheelkes, and remoue both pimples and tetters. As well the rawe as boyled heades eaten, do reconer an olde cough: but the boyled heades eaten, are farre more profitable then the raw, and likewise the sodden, then the rosted: and on such wise to the voice they doe more profit and helpe. The person which shall afoze haue eaten sundrie Garlike heades, if he after happen to drinke payson, shall not be harmed by it.

The heades with the greene blades boyled in wine and drunke,
doth

doth not onely moue vaine, but procureth the termes and draweth down the after burden, if the bellie afoze be annointed with it: the like also may a smoke of the Garlike procure, if a woman sitting in a hollow chaire, and couered close about with clothes, receiueth the fume.

The Garlike bzuised with the fig tree leaues and Camomil floures by a like quantitie, and applyed in plaister forme, doth cure the bit of a mad dog or other beast.

The person which weakly digesteth meat eaten, through the coldnesse of the stomacke, shall find great helpe through the sundrie times eating of the sodden heades with oyle and vineger.

Praxagoras vsed the Garlike in wine, against the kinges euil. Hippocrates suppoeth that the after burden to bee drawne downe through the sitting ouer the smoke, and Diocles, frensie persons they doe greatly helpe, if they after the boyling shal be eaten, and the same the drop sic persons, boyled with Centorie: and the Garlike eaten, stayeth the fluxe of the bellie, which the skilfull report, the greens more effectuously to performe, bzuised and drunk in pure wine with Coliander.

For an olde cough proceeding of a cold cause, let the soles of the feete, paulmes of the hands, and chyne of the backe, be diligently annointed with the Barrowes greace, finely tempered with three heades of Garlike cleane pilled.

The Garlike eaten with fresh butter, or applyed in plaister forme on the stomacke, doth in short time kill the woymes in Children.

The Garlike boiled with vineger and drunke with water and honny, expelleth the badde woymes in the bodie, and what other harmefull creeping things in the bowels. The heades boyled with oyle, and applyed in plaister forme, doth cure the bit of venomous thinges, in what part so euer the same happeneth.

The harmes and swellinges of the bladder, are remoued with this ointment, if it be sundrie times applyed without.

The Garlike boyled with milke, and eaten, doth heale the blcers of the Lungen.

The Garlike boyled with Centorie in wine, and sundrie times drunke, remoueth the drop sicke, gathered of a cold cause. The Garlike bzuised & mixed with Coliander, and on such wise taken with wine, helpeth

helpeth the griefs of the Linges, and difficultie of the vyne. The heades boyled and brysed with beanes, and tempered either with oyle Olive or oyle of Poppie, and of the same an ointment made, removeth head-ache, annointed on the temples.

There is no better thing for the toothach proceeding of a cold cause then to wash and retaine for a time, the decoction of the Garlike thre clones brysed in vinegar, which undoubtedly ceaseth the paine.

The heades also boyled with vinegar and Sitre, doe remove the itch, and taken in a white bryth, ceaseth the grievous paine of the going often to the stole. A Garlike head after the boyling in sweete wine, with a halfe pennie waight of Beniamine drunke, doth in short time expel the quartaine.

The same brysed and mixed with fresh butter, profiteth very much the pppes of Hens and Cocks.

The person hardly making water, and subiect to the stone, shall greatly be eased of the grievous paine, by eating of Garlike sundrie times.

The worthy Galen uttereth, that the heades tenderly boyled in two or thre waters, do remove the sourenesse of them, but these then yield a verie small nourishment, in respect of the raw eaten with vinegar.

The inconueniences of Garlike out of Plinie.

The defaults of the Garlike are (as Plinie writeth) that it bulleth the sight, causeth windinesse, harmeth the stomacke, and much at a time eaten, causeth thirst.

So that for all causes it is better commended sodden then raw, and boyled then roasted.

The Garlike boyled and roasted, brought to fine powder with Parsike and Bellitorie, if the mouth be washed with the same decoction, doth marvellously helpe the toothach.

The Garlike profiteth crafts men, husbandmen, and the Pleuma, ticke, and those which for the more part drinke water, and both use cold meates and hard of digestion.

The

The Garlike auaileth against the infections of waters, mutation of places, and other contagious ayres (which hastily annoy) by the eating afoze of it, in such suspect places.

As touching the Affrica Garlike, the same may serue vnto all the diseases and griefes in a manner, which tofoze are witten of the garden Garlike.

The commended vertues of the distilled water
of Garlike.

The heades with the græne blades finely shredde ought to bee distilled in the Canicular or dogge dayes, in a tinne Lynbecke.

This distilled water, helpeth the swellings in the throat, if a linnen cloth wet in the same, be wo:kemanly applyed, and drunke vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, or gargelled so often in the mouth and throat, vntill the patient be better amended.

The water drunke euerie morning fasting, vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, doth maruellously amend the græne sicknesse, and swelling of the Splene, being bled so, twelue or fourteene dayes space.

The water also drunke, profitech vnto all the saide sicknesse and griefes, which tofoze are vttered of the blade and roote.

VVhat care and skill is required in the sowing and ordering, both of the Scalion and Squyle Onion.

Chap. 12.

The Scalions better prosper and come vp, being set then solone, for when they are committed to the earth in the seedes, the owner may not hope for a seemely growth of them, befoze the second yeare. The owner may bestowe the Scalions in well dresed beddes, from the beginning of Nouember, vnto the ende of Februarie, for to eniue the proper yeelde the next Spring following: and they require to bee likewise set in the ground, as afoze taught to the Garlike.

But

But they are to be plucked vp to vse, befoze that the March violettes be in their full pride and flourish, so; if these be longer suffered, as vnto the time of the perfit flourishing of the violets, they are then founde feeble and withered. And so; to know when the Scallions are ripe, it behooueth the Gardener to marke whether the blades beneath be withered, so; on such wise scene, denoteth the full ripenesse of them. And to possesse Scallions with bigge heads, it behooueth the Gardener, to bestowe rounde about the rootes soft Cowe dung, and to water them often, which growen to a reasonable heighth, hee must also treade downe and order as afoze vttered in the vsing of the Leeke.

The Squill Onion better commeth so;ward in the Garden, being set with the head, than sown in the seed, so; when the seeds are committed to the Earth, they peeble slowlye their seemely bushe and heads.

The owner may bestow the heades of the Squill Onions in well laboured and dressed beddes, so that the ground be of a dry nature, and tending vnto a saltnesse, whether grauelly or sandie, so; they desire a like diligence to be bestowed on them, as is afoze vttered of the Onion and Garlike.

The antient and latter writers report, that there are two kindes of the Squill Onion, as the Male & Female, the Male peelding white leaues, and the Female black. This strong by nature, will continue in the hanging vp (in a shadowie place) a long time green, & it lightly groweth (as Theophrastus writeth) bestowed in dry earth, & speedily shooteth vp to a heighth, it keepeth fruits to be preserved, especially Pomegranats, the stalkes afoze broken off: and this is said to beare floure thrice in a yeare, so; shewing by it, the three seasons of committing seeds to the earth, as the first time of bearing floures, to signifie the first time of plowing, the second time of floure bearing, the second time: the third, the last time: so; how many times these appeare, euen so often is the earth accustomed to be laboured.

The floure also of the Squill Onion (as Bericius writeth) shooting vp in a straight stemme, if so be it doth not hastily wither, signifieth the large or plentiful peeble of fruits.

The Phisicke helps both of the Scalion and
Squill Onion.

As touching the benefit of the Scalions, there is no other aide
nor profite to be hoped after, saying that these yeld a more de-
light to the mouth, than the health of the bodie, for the Scalli-
ons serue to no other purpose, than to stir vp or moue persons
vnto the veneriall act.

The Squill Onion hath the vertue of heating in the seconde
degré, and cutting especiallye of the foughe matter in the Ro-
marke.

The Squill Onion vscruative, is herie hurtfull to the bodie, espe-
cially to the inwarde members or partes, for which cause, the Squill
Onion is not inwardly to be taken, except they afore be either roasted
or boyled, or by some other maner prepared.

The worthiest force of the same in Medicines is, by sharpening it
especially with Vineger, for which cause, (beeing so prepared) na-
med the Squillitike Vineger, the making of whiche is after this
maner.

Take the heades cleane pilled from the outwarde skinnies, those
(after the shredding) hang in a Sunnye place, beeing spiced
through with small Backthrede (in suche manner) that the partes
bee a pretie distance asunder, which like handles, let hang for fortie
daies space.

The dry pieces after bestow into a Hogs head of most sharpe Vi-
neger, but in such maner, that these of no part touch the vessell. The
Hogs head after couered so close, that no vapours may breathe forth,
and set into the hote Sunne.

After the xiiii. day, let the vessell be lift vp, and the pieces taken
forth, which done, the owner shall then possesse a moste sharpe
Vineger.

There are others, which make the Squillitike Wine after this
maner: the pieces of it shred, they bestow into a vessell of Wine new
made (that being put in) it may on such wise heat together, and they
vse this Wine to those purposes, as the Vineger.

The Phisick commodities of the Squill Onion are (as the lear-
ned

ned Constantine, in his Booke de gradibus uttereth) to amende the droppe persons, such fetchyng the winde hardly, the defaults of the Liver and Milt proceeding of clammy humors.

The persons sicke of the Ague, and having crulcerations or sores within the bodie, ought to refraine the taking of the Squiliticke vinegar. For the Squiliticke vinegar or wine, purgeth grosse fleume, and corrodeth, procureth the going to the stoule, and byrnie, & causeth vomiting.

The Squill Onion (after the mind of Dioscorides) is roasted after this maner, this wrought in paste or clay is set into an Oven, or covered with coles, untill the paste or crust about it be sufficiently baked, which drawen or taken forth, if the head be yet not sufficiently softened, then after the covering of it with paste, the second time, and set in an Oven, bake the same thoroughly.

The Onions are also kindly baked or roasted in an Earthen pottle, the mouth well stopped with dowe or course paste, and sette into the Oven.

This besides cut into rounde pieces, & after the stitching through with Backthreed, that these be a pretty distance asunder, hang in the ayre from the Sunne beames, for on such wise handled, it serveth to the making of the oyle, vinegar, and wine.

The singular Dioscorides teacheth the maner of boyling the Squill Onion, after this sorte: Take the middle partes (the outward skinnes pilled awaye) whiche after the slicing into partes and boyled, throw the first water forth, on which poure other water, boyling in lyke condition, and this so often do, untill no more bitternesse nor tartnesse in the water bee felte: after these, the slices hanged uppe, and dyed in the shadowe, as above uttered, whiche done, if halfe a dramme of the fine powder be sucked downe with Honey, the same amendeth the long continuance of the hard fetchyng of breath, an olde cough, and the griefes both of the Liver and Milt, yea the droppe and Jaundise. The lyke woorketh the Squiliticke Vineger, and the same expelleth woormes, and other corruptions in the bodie.

The Oximel made of the Squilitick vinegar, expelleth Melancholy, remoueth the Apoplexie & falling sicknes, breaketh & sendeth forth the Stone, & same also purgeth & Patrice of clammy humors, and helpeth

the ache in the Hippes. The Squillitike vineger fastneth the teethe, by sundry times washing and rubbing of them with it, and amendeth a stinking breath.

The same dropped into the eares, remoueth the clammy humours hindering the hearing. The oyle in which the Squill Onion shall be steeped, annointed on places putteth away warts, and cureth both the chaps & cliftes of the face: the same annointed on moyst or running scabs, healeth (or at the least) correcteth them, putteth away the danger of the head, and profiteth annointed on the bite of Serpents, and other venemous wormes.

The Squill Onion containeth in it an oyle which is blacke: this oyle tempered with Hony, and annointed on a balde place, procurth haire to grow. The Squillitike vineger holden in the mouth, amendeth the corrupted and foule gummes. The same used, procureth a clearer sight of the eyes, healthfull and profitable it is to the griefs of the sides and stomack, if a litle be taken twice a day, but hastily drunk down, it ouercommeth the partie for a while.

The Squillitike Onion boiled in wine and drunke, expelleth all the inward diseases of the bodie, and helpeth especially a sore and corrupt Liver.

The Squill Onion prepared in the aboue-said maner, and boyled with Wormewood and Gallick in water and vineger, and sweetned with Sugar, helpeth vnto the stopping of the Liver and Spleen, recureth the kings euil and drop sicke, mightily causeth vrine, driveth downe the termes, and expelleth the dead youngling. If Pice happen to drinke of the water, in which the Squillitike Onion shall be steeped for a night, they soon after die.

The distilled water of the Squill Onion, mixed with meale which Pice willingly eate, and bestowed in such places where they haunt, doeth in short time kil those which eate of the same.

What

What care and skill is required in the preparing and ordering of the Garden Saffron.

Chap. 23.

As touching the garden Saffron, it loyeth to bee bestowed in a moine and chalkie ground, and euermore well laboured, and it may verie well bee set in the beddes, where the Onions haue beene newly plucked up. The Saffron requireth watering and moisture, for which cause the heades ought to be set in beddes, betweene which forrowes made, that these may receive the moisture falling, which they greatly feare. Besides these, the heades are much endamaged through the resorts of spites and poles, which greatly cōtinue to feede on the rootes of Onions of the Saffron.

The remedies against these two noyous beastes, are fully taught in my first part, which the reader may resort vnto.

The heades are rather to be bestowed in the earth, then the seedes, in that the seedes (after the comunitting to the earth) prosper not.

The heads are to be set on ridges, at the moneth of Aprill or May, and the heads laide on a heape, to lye and wither in the shadow from the Sunnes beames, for the space of eight dayes before, which done, to set them with the hairie rootes in the earth well laboured and dressed, and at length one by an other, well halfe a hand breadth a sander, and three fingers deepe. Certaine there are which will them to bee set for the better yeeld, after the midst of August, vnto the middle of September, letting these to remaine for two or three yeares, and that euerie yeare in the month of Aprill and May the leaues or blades then dye, to breake off ouerly, the other prospering to weed about, and to raise the earth after, two fingers deepe, but in such manner, that the heads be not touched.

After that the hearbs be sufficiently cleansed, when as the flowers be withered and deade, especially in August and towarde Haruest, which flourish not aboue a moneth, then these are to bee gathered in the morning after Sunne rising, and after the drying by a gentle fire to bee kept together in bags of leather, in a close and drye place.

And this one thing as maruellous, is worthe to be noted, that the roote of Onion standing quite out of the earth, yeldeth notwithstanding

standing the proper floure of continuance but a day or two after the full opening, at the season of the yeare: but the head afterwards (as depriued of nourishment) withereth and rotteth.

The blades be fresh and Greene all the winter through, in that the heades be full of iuice, and sufficient strong to endure the cold season. When the Saffron is set, and in the third yeare digged up, there are found about each head five or six heades growing, and ioyned together within the earth.

The best Saffron is the same, which is fresh and new, and excelleth in the goodnesse of colour, in such maner, that the toppes in which the seeds are contained be white, and mixed with a rednesse: the thing also is not lightly broken, and rubbed in the hand, coloureth the skin, and is in saueur comfortable, with a gentle sharpenesse. And this is named the Oriental Saffron.

The Phisicke benefits and helpes of the Saffron.

The Saffron hath the property of heating in the second, and drying in the first degree, as Aegineta witnesseth. The Saffron endureth for five yeares in perfect strength, being close kept in a leather bag, and set in a drye place.

Take a scruple of good Saffron, or the third part of a dramme, and halfe a graine waight of pure Spicke, this mixed together with the best and hote wine, drinke fasting, for it is a singuler remedie against the hard fetching of breath, of what cause soener the same shall happen.

The Saffron procureth a fresh and faire colour to the drinkers of it, it comforteth the hart: purgeth and causeth healthfull bloud, and remoueth poysons from the hart. Taken in meat, it causeth a long and easie breathing and helpeth the Asthma.

Against the infection and plague inward, many after the torrifying of the Saffron, Triackle and Mustard, seide in an emptie egge-shell close stopp'd, doe make an electuarie, with other spices adioyned, which after the taking expelleth the poyson or infection by sweates.

The vse of it profiteth impostumes in the breast, & those that be short winded, it amendeth the milt, moueth the veneriall ad, and causeth
vaine,

byrne, this also availeth against the vehement aking and paines of the head if such a plaister bee made with the same: take of Saffron, Gumme Arabiche, Euphorbium, and Pyre, of each a like waight, these after the finely working to powder, and tempering with the white of an egge, apply in the plaister forme to the foreheade, for this without doubt availeth.

The Saffron taken either in meate or drinke, procureth byrne, & the Termes. this also amendeth the yelow Jaundise, drinke especially with sweet wine or Palmafee: this given besides to an ulcered breast, stomacke, liver, lunges, kidneys, and bladder, greatly profiteth. For the grievous paine of the Throte, take a quantitie of Saffron, which with the yolke of egg, oyle of Roses, and Rose water, an ointment made, apply with a feather on the grieved place: the Saffron with crums of white bread and milke, after the boyling together, applied in the forme of a pultise, on swellings, impostumes, and blcers, doth greatly asswage both the swelling and paine, yea mightely looseth and breaketh impostumes.

If with Opium, barley meale milke, and the white of an egge, an ointment be made after arte, and annointed on any painefull sore place, it doth asswage the griefes in short time. The Saffron (as Vialis writeth) doth greatly amend the feebling of the hart, and weakness of stomacke. The Saffron comforteth palley members, and looseth the hardness of parts: for the which cause, the same, named Dicrocie, is right profitable. The saffron remoueth the griefe of the eyes, either of bloud or other blenish, if with rose leaves brought to ponde, and mixed with the yolke of an egge, the same be applied in plaister forme on a linnen cloth to the eye. The saffron remoueth all swellings and griefes of the eyes, if the same be especially mixed with wine, and applied in plaister forme.

The Saffron is profitable mixed with womanes milke, annointed, for the distilling of the eyes. The Saffron remoueth drunkennes, drinke with Cude. The person also which shall drinke of the powder of Saffron in wine, shall not be overcome by drinking. This besides is verie profitable for remedies of the eares.

What skill, care and diligence is required in the workemanly sowing
and ordering of the Nautewes.
Chap. 24.

The Nautewes and Turnups, are sowne after one manner, in
earth well turned vp, and orderly dressed, or if the owner will
in earable ground, and will endure in a manner any ayre: yet
these desire a drye ground, rather lean and gravelly and dili-
gently turned vp.

The seedes well prosper, bestowed in a fine powdered earth, well
laboured afoze: and to possesse faire Nautewes, let not the seedes be a
boone thre yeares olde: for being elder, the seedes run into Coleworts.
If the plants in the comming vp appeare too thicke together, the ow-
ner may plucke them vp, and set them thinner in other well dressed
places. These also in the growing vp, ought diligently to be weeded
and the earth to be digged about, and let the greater and fairer still
grow, to possesse their seedes, which in the moneth of August, diligent-
ly bestow in a well laboured earth.

To commit seedes to the earth the owner ought to stay untill
the ground be well moistned with showers, for bestowed soone af-
ter, they prosper and come the speedier vp: But the owner or
Gardener ought in any case to take heede, that he bestow not the seedes
in a shadowie place, for the shadowie places are disagreeable and
hurtfull to the plants, although the ground be good, fertill and well
laboured.

The proprietie manie times of the ground both alter the Nautew
into a Turnup, and the Turnup into a Nautew.

The owner ought to gather the Nautewes in the moneth of No-
uember, and to possesse them all the winter time, he must burie the
rootes in sand lying in a seller, that he may not onely eate of them in
the winter time, but all the Lent throug.

The best Nautewes be those, which are rather long, & as they
were crisped, and not big, and possessing few rootes, at the most but
one samely root, and the same straight and sharpe downwarde.

There be which make a singular composition of the Nautewes, with
Rash rootes, a litle Salt, Honey, Mustard, delectabler spices, and
Vineger: yea the same may be made without spices, both holosome
and profitable.

The

The Phisick benefites of the Narewes.

The worthy Galen reporteth the Narewe to be hote in the second degree, and moist in the first.

The Narewes tenderly boyled, doe nourish much, yet euilly or hardly digested, and they make soft flesh, and the same puffed vp, yet this lesse than the Turnup, who also ought to be boyled in water, and that first water after the boiling poured forth, then into a second water bestowed, diligently boile them; the hardnesse of their substance, will well be tempered; and meanelly ingender a nourishment betwene good and euil.

The Narewes which are not thoroughly boyled, be euilly digested, and procure a windinesse in the body, besides a stopping of the veins, and natural powers; for which cause, these yeld a more commoditie to the stomack, and digest better, being twice boyled in faire water, and shifted a third time into a most fatte broth, where boyled vnto a sufficient tendernes, and then eaten, there be which boile them a third time in new Cow milke, for the better digesting.

The Seedes confected with Sugar, and eaten, encrease Sperme in man. But the Seedes brused and drunke, doe especiallie auaille against popsons, for the which cause, these are profitably ministered with Triacle.

What care and skill is required in the sowing and rightly ordering of the Rape and Turnup.

Chapter. 25.

The Rapes bee not muche differing from the Narewes and Turnappes, sauing that these bee bigger, and sweete in the eating. For the Rapes or Turnups be muche greater, and in the eating pleasanter than the Narewes: The Rapes require a like ordering and dressing of the Earthe, as alsoe uttered of the Narewe, whiche for truely ought to bee rather solwen in the Moneth of September, than in anie other time, in a moist earth, well dunged, diligently turned in and dressed: for by that meanes they prosper and come the better forthwarde, and are caused to bee fatter, tenderer, bigger, and sweeter of taste through the colde season

W b

follow,

following, like as the hoarie frostes, snow, and colde mistes, than in the dry and warme season of the yere.

After these be come vp, and readie to be remooued, the owner must carefully see vnto, that the leaues be not gnawen neither of spiders, nor of any other vermin or worms, and for the auoiding of like annoyance, it shalbe profitable for the Gardener (wet a day before the committing of the Seeds to the Earth) to mix the Seeds with the powder or dust of plinke bones, or rather with the soote of a Chimney, which after wet with water, to the ende the Seeds may receiue some moisture, and being thus ordered, bestow the whole together in the earth the next day following.

The skilful Neapolitane Rutilius reporteth that the rape or Turnep (as the French) prospereth vnder every aire, and desireth to be bestowed in a fat and loose earth, & the same so loose, that it in a manner falleth to powder, whereby the Seeds may prosper, and come the speedier forward.

The seeds also are to be bestowed with fine powdered earth, to the ende the plants may not come vp too thick together, about the end of July, vnto the midst of September: and if raine happen not the day before, then the day following, moisten the ground with water gently sprinkled vpon.

If the seeds committed to the Earth be bestowed thin, the plants in the coming vp (by diligence of the Gardener) wil encrease the bigger, for which cause, where the plants grow thick together, and these come to some strength, the owner may pluck vp sundry, and bestow those a good distance asunder, whereby they grow the bigger in roote.

And for the better furtherance of their growth, the owner shal sundry times water and weed about the plants. The seeds may be sown in the open field, and where Turneps grow, if so be the ground be diligently ploughed, and the rootes weeded forth, these after the bestowing in the earth, may the owner only couer with the harrow or rake, because the seeds lye shallow on the ground.

The seeds lay in an open field, far from the shadow of Trees, in that these lying vnder shadow be much harmed: if the owner minde to commit seeds to the earth in a dry season, he may the bestow them in some well dressed place being moist and shadowie, thicke together after the maner of the Colewort.

After

After this, when the plants be well growen vp, and the earth sufficiently moistened with shoures, the owner may remoue and set the plants in larger places wel dressed, from the ende of August vnto the entring of the Sunne into Libra or middle of September.

The Kapes to serue in the winter time, ought to be gathered in the moneth of October, and those which are the fairer, by plucking away the outward leaues, may bee set againe in well dunged and dressed earth to yeld Seedes the Sommer following.

And to preserve the Kape or Turnip rootes, to serue the winter and Lent time, the owner may worke after this maner, by washing first the rootes, and these raise, bestow in rankes one vpon another, and in eche ranke strewe salt, fennell seedes, and saneris, or only couer them with salt, close conched, and on such wise letting these remaine for eight daies, poure so much faire water vpon, as wil couer them: Which done, let the bestell stand in some vault or Deller, to serue for the aboue said times, or longer if the owner will, if so be he fill by the bestell, when these lie bare and dry. These hitherto Ruellius in his instructions of husbandry.

This one thing is maruellous and woorthy the noting, so small a seede to encrease in roote, to suche a bignesse as wee many times see them, of which the like hath been seene to haue wayed thirtie, yea forty pound weight, to the admiration of many.

The owner ought especially to take heed, that the seedes to be committed to the Earth, be not aboue thre yeares olde. For the grounds otherwise of the Kapes, wil change and bring forth Colewortes.

For to enioy faire & big rootes, let the owner new set those rootes which be growen vnto a finger bignesse, well a span distant one from the other. Which done, and these somewhat moze growen, the owner ought to tread downe with the foote, and diligently couer the heades thicke with Earth, whereby the iuice of the leaues and stalkes may run to the encreasing of the rootes.

The rootes after the gathering in the moneth of November, may likewise be preserved, to serue the Winter and Lent time, as afoze is uttered of the **Pauew.**

The Phisick vertues and helpes of the Rapes.

The Rapes heate in the second degree, and moisten in the first : these cause manie humours, hardly digest, and increase much winde. The solwen Rapes are harde of digestion : which notwithstanding boyled doe swel the belly, and encrease humours in the bodie.

The Rapes haue a maruellous propertie in sharpening the sight, as the singuler Auerrois writeth : Yet these throughtly boyled, as I afoze vttered to be done by the Spanewes, doe yelde a nourishment, and are profitable to the bodie : contrariwise these eaten rawe wil be not well boyled, doe hardly digest, cause winde in the bodie, and molest the stomack.

The Rape seedes bled in the seed of Triacle, recouereth and helpeth popsoning, if any hauing drunke or eaten popson, shall take the seedes brused in water and hony, this of experientce knowen, repeseth or abateth the force of the popson, that the same cannot harme.

The Rape or Turnep rootes confected with vineger, doth cole and ingender winde, yet these extinguisht the hote and dry blood, of which most great and perillous sicknesses are caused. The roots and seedes eaten doe stir and moue the veneriall act.

They are profitable to health, being eaten after the third boyling, and if any soule arayed with scabs, which represent the kind of a Leprie, doe washe all the bodie with the water in which the Rape seedes shal afoze be boiled, it doth with the same cause in short time a fayzer and clearer skin. The rape rootes boiled in May butter, after the tender seething, eaten with a little salt, doe lose the breast : the decoction of them taken, ceaseth a dry cough, boiled with oyle Olive, and eaten with pepper and a little salt, doeth help digestion. The rootes daily eaten, doe engender grosse humours, for which cause greatly misliked of Democritus, to be vnder a proper sustentance.

The decoction or broth of the roots tenderly boiled, applyed on pained members, the hote Gout, and kibes heeles, doe speedily amende and help these : if any in the side of the roote after the making of a hole, doe bestow in it the oile of Roses, and vnto wrought war, and after the tender roasting vnder hotte embers, doe apply the same in blcered or soze kibes,

kybes, it shall in short time cure them.

The benefits of the distilled water of Rapes.

The garden Rape or Turnep, both leaues and rootes shyed, ought to be distilled about the end of Iune, in a Lin Limbecke.

This water preuaileth against the galling of members, if those be dayly washed and suppled with the same, and that a linnen cloth wet in it, be applyed twice or thrice a day.

This helpeth any burning or scalding, if the same be washed with it, but after a crust gathered on the place, the same will in no manner be removed, but through the dayly washing of it with this water, which in the end perfectly cureth the soze.

The distilled water of the putrified Rapes, applied often hote with a linnen cloth wet in it, doth greatly profit the swelling and sozes of the foot, caused of cold.

What skill and diligence is required with the secretes to be learned in the sowing and ordering of the Radish.
Chap. 26.



The garden Radish with vs, is better knowne, then I with pen can offer the description of the same, for in a manner euery person, aswell the rich, as the pooze, the Cytizens as countriemen, when their stomacke is slacke or irketh at meate, they then to procure an appetite to feeding by the same roote, by cutting the rootes either into a length on each side, or into round slices, doe workmanlie season them with salt, heating them so: the moze delight to the mouth, betwene two dishes, supposing a moze tenderneffe caused to the rootes, through the like doing: whose care and diligence in the bestowing of it in the earth, ought (after the minde of Columella) to be after this manner, that the beddes, before the bestowing of the seedes, be wel laboured, and workmanly turned in with dung, and when the rootes be growne to some bignesse, then the earth to bee raised and diligently heaped about them, so: if the rootes shall bee naked or lye bare of earth, that both the Sunne and ayre beate upon them, then will they

they become, in their further growth, both hard and hollow like to the Mushrome, as Plinie reporteth, which prescribeth to these, both a loose and moist earth.

The worthy Rutilius (in his instructions of husbandrie) uttereth, that the Radishes refuse a hard, sandie, and grauellie ground, and do ioy in the moisture of the ayre: besides, these ought to bee sowne in beddes a good distance a sunder, and the earth deepe digged after a late or new raine fallen, except the place by hap shall be moist, and sowne watered.

The seedes committed to the earth, ought immediately and with diligence, to bee couered light with a Rake, and neither dung bestowed within, nor strawed vpon the beddes (although Columella otherwise willeth) but onely chaffe of cozne, as after shall further be uttered.

The skillfull practised in garden matters report, that these better prosper being orderly set, then curiously sowne, and that these to bee bestowed in the earth, as both sowne and set, at two times of the yeare, as in the moneth of Februarie, and beginning of March, if the owner shall enioy the rootes timely, and in August vnto the middell of September. if the owner would enioy them much sooner: and these then bestowed in the earth, are without doubt far better, sozasmuch as the Radish in the cold season, groweth and increaseth especially in the roote, and is the same time tenderer. whereas the plants otherwise in the faire and warme season, run vp into a leafe and stennie. Yet this manner of trauaile, to possesse them in the sharpe winter, is litle in vse with vs, because the Radish can il abide the bitter ayre, which once bitten and tainted with the frostes either withereth, or sowne after dyeth, yet the learned Plinie writing of the Radish uttereth the same to ioy so much in the cold ayre, that in Germanie hath sometimes bene scene a Radish, which grew in compasse so big as an infants midle.

The skillfull Aristomachus in his learned instructions of husbandrie willeth that the leaues of the Radish in the winter time be broken off, and throwne away, and to heape the earth high about them, least pudles of water do stand in the beds: soz the rootes on such wise increase, and be big in the sommer time.

Howsoever the rootes shall be handled, certaine it is, that the colde
ayre

ayze and frostes do increase and sweeten the rootes (as afoze vttered of the Rape) if so be they may continue in winter time: for the colde ayze conuerteth the increasement into the rootes, and not into the leaues, although that those (as Theophrastus vttereth) do ware then hard in many places.

The rootes are caused to grow the sweeter in eating, and more delectable in taste, if the leaues be broken off (as Plinie hath noted) before the Radishes shote vp into a stemme.

And the lease of the Radish, howe much the smaller the same shall bee, euen so much the tenderer and delectabler roote will it peelee, which by watering with a salt licour, or pickle, causeth to breath forth the bitternesse quite, if any such rest or bee in the roote.

As the like Plinie wrote, that the Radish to be fedde, yea and willed the rootes, for the tenderesse, to be often watered with pickle, or salt water.

The Egyptians watered with Sytre, to the end the rootes might be commendabler in sweetnesse and delight to the mouth, which possesse a Cartilage and thicke rinde, to these, in many rootes, sharpe in taste, yet delectable in eating, which part left bare about the ground becommeth tough and hard, though the occasion afoze vttered, and hollow (like to the Mushrom) vntesse they bee well couered about with light earth.

There are Radishes supposed to be of a Feminine kinde which be so sharpe, and these possesse smaller leaues, and to the eye be a fairer greene, as Rutilius vttereth of them.

If the owner couet to enioy swete rootes in taste, then after the counsel and mind of the singulet Florentine, let him steepe the seedes for two dayes before, in either water or hony, or Cytre, or els sugred water, and these dyed in the shadow, to commit them orderly to the earth.

If the Gardener desire to possesse faire and great rootes, let hym (after the minde of a Neapolitane Rutilius) when the rootes be grown to some bignesse, plucke away all the leaues, saving two within to grow still, which done, couer the earth often ouer the heades, whereby the iuice may the more runne to the roots, in causing them to grow the sweeter and pleasanter.

A like experience in causing the roote to become marvellous big, doth Plinie skillfully vtter and teach, after this manner, by taking a great dyble, with the which making a hole in the earth well six fingers deepe, fill it vp with fresh chaffe, after bestow a seede of the Radish with dung and light earth ouer the mouth, couering the same in like maner euon with the earth, these perfozmed, the roote will grow and increase vnto the bignesse of the hole.

The skillfull practioners report, that the goodnesse of the Radish is knowne by the leaues, which the sweeter they bee (after the manner) so much the tenderer and more pleasant are the rootes in the eating, the like teacheth o; sheweth the rinde, which the thinner the same is, so much the delectabler is the roote in taste of the mouth.

The thinne bestowing of the seedes in well dressed beds, from the end of August vnto the midst of September, and after the comming vp diligently weeded about with the leaues broken off, the light earth couered about, and often watered with salt water, doe procure the rootes not onely to waie, o; grow the bigger, but tenderer and sweeter in the eating. so; as much as the salt pickle very much abateth the bitternes consisting in them, as by a like we customably see, that these be eaten with vinegar and salt.

And the plants better prosper, comming vp in an open ayre, then bestowed in a shadowie place, where in the increase, the roots be much hindered.

If the owner happen to commit seedes to the earth in a drye season, let them be sowne the thicker in beddes, and if the same may be, in a moist ground lightly watered.

The plants growne to a reasonable height aboue the earth, and that shoures haue moistned the ground a day before, the plants may then be remoued, and set into beds well laboured and workmanlike dressed, which by diligence bestowed, grow the better and pleasanter in the eating.

What the radish may not be harmed with the garden fleas, Theophrastus willet; to sow in the beds among them, the pulse named Eruum.

Other singuler helps so; the most herbs, may be learned in my first part: which I haue gathered so; the most part out of ancient writers.

Here

There is not to be overpassed, that in Radishes a bitterness consisteth according to the thickness of the rinde, as the worthy Plinie uttereth, which writeth that these also do offend the teeth, by blunting or setting them an edge.

But in this place cometh to minde, a secrete very profitable, and to be esteemed with Wintners, which the Murtherer freely uttereth to them.

If the Wintner cutteth a Radish into slices, and bestoweth those pieces in a vessel of corrupt wine, doth in short time draw all the evil saoure and loathsomnesse (if any such consisteth in the wine) and to these the tartnesse of it, like receiveth, which if the roote be not able to rid and draw quite forth this default, let the same immediately be taken forth (and if neede shall require) put in a fresh roote the next red. For this no doubt hath often been proved, and proved manie by understanding of the secrete.

This no doubt is a secrete verie marvellous, that the Radish in no wise agreeth to be placed or growe nigh to the Wine, for the deadly hatred betwixen them, insomuch that the vine nere growing, turneth or windeth backe with the Branches, as mightily disdainyng and hating the Radish growing fast by. If wee may creepe the learned Plinie, Galen, and the Neapolitane Rutilius, which seeme to haue diligently noted the same.

And the reason they report to be lyke (as afore uttered of the agreement of the Colewort with the Wine) which is, through the hidde discorde of natures consisting in them, so that if the places were changed, yet for all the remouing, will they in no manner ioyn together.

Of which Androcles affirmed the Radish and Colewort, to be a singular remedie against drunkennesse, so that the antient in Greece, commonly ioyned and matched the drinking of wine, with the Radish, as I afore uttered in the Chapter of the Colewort, so that no marvell it is, if these be used so common.

The Radish in this part hath been of such account, and so worthily esteemed, that Moschion the Greeke wrote a large pamphlet of the worthy praises of the same: yea the Radish before other meates, was so preferred in Greece, y at Delphos in the Temple of Apollo, the Radish was esteemed as Gold, the Beet as Silver, and the Rape

of Turnep and Lead. **The Radish** also is saide to possesse vertue for the puerie, and buried in a heape of salt, doth alter and reduce the same into a watery pickle.

The Radish to conclude, in the remaining and setting againe, loseth the sharpe nose resting in it, and this hath a singular delight in the rinde, so that the same be new gathered and not too old of growth, therefore by the example of many selous eaters, doe unabashedly refuse and omit the using of it, as if it were a thing to be feared and avoided. And drawing to an end, I think it right profitable to offer the making of Vineger with the Radish, as the learned Petrus Crescentius (in his work of husbandry) hath noted the same. **The rootes** of the Radish (with be) being dried and brought to fine powder, and bestowed into a vessell which hath wine thereto, let stand to settle (after the well laboring and mixing together) for certaine daies: which done, the owner shall enjoy a Radish vineger, very laudable and much commended for the dissolving and waisting of the stone in the kidneyes, and many other painfull griefes.

The Phisick benefits and helps of the Radish.

The Garden Radish (after the minde of the learned) heateth in the third degree, and drieth in the second, but the wilde Radish in phisick causes, is more effectuall.

This one incommo-
dity (among the phisick helps) doth the Radish possesse, which is, that it procureth many times belching, after the eating at Supper. For a remedie of this annoyance or incommo-
dity, may be either incontinent eate, certaine branches of Sloe,
Time, or Dyanth, or eate the roote with pure Oyle.

And for this one incommo-
dity to be taken away, the roote yeeldeth a marvellous number of benefites, for the health and sake of persons.

Here further learne, the other incommo-
dities written by the wise, which are, that the Radish eaten, either before or after meales, doth cause winde, the resting of the stomach, bulleth the braine, eyes, and reason.

The singular Creeke Florentinus (in his instructions of husbandry)

Doeth witeth, that the Radish doth profit very much the fleumaticke, and marvellously helpeth the stone in the kidneys, and stopping of the vyne by Cruell: If any especially boyle the rinde with white wine and water, and drinke the same morning and evening, or the rinde of the Radish bruised and strained, and drinke fasting in the morning, and that the patient shall perseuer or continue with the same for certaine daies.

The rinde after the stopping in white wine for eight houres drinke with a fourth part of the ponde of Speedler hernel, like awayleth.

The radish taken fasting in the morning, with warme water prepared, procureth vomiting, for which matter, & obstructions rather appoint the seeds boyled, than the rote. If the rote be eaten with Oyle of Lin, it stancheth the belchings of the stomack, which are wont to be caused by the same, in that the Oyle suffereth not such wind to rise.

The iuice drunke with Grite, cureth the kings evil, & drunke with water and honey, amendeth the cough, which on such wise ministered, doth helpe those fetching the winde short and painfully.

The whole substance of the rote, so muche awayleth against the poyson, that taking the same fasting, it shall nothing harme the creature.

And the hands annointed with the iuice of the Radish, as also vttered in my first part, may handle serpents without feare.

The iuice of the Radish dropped into the eares, doeth speedely aswage the winde and noise in them, the same drunke with water and honey, recovereth the Hemorrhoids, the leanes boyled in yor redge in stead of Coleworts, and eaten Renny times, amendeth the stoppings of the Luer and Bilt.

The leaves bruised and given with white wine, is right profitable against all sorts of poysons, and other dangerous diseases.

And if any be a punishment, receive grienous strokes and spottes by whipping, hanging, and applying the Radish on the places, shall speedely cure them.

The same also cleareth scarres and reduceth wannie spottes vnto the perfitt colours, and remoueth the pimples in the face: this besides deliuereth the quartane Ague, if the same be daily given by the way of a vomit, at the comming of the fit.

The iuice of Radish boyled with Hony, and after the adding of a little Vineger, the same strained and drunk, profiteth against the quarraine ague, and stopping of the spitt.

The Radish applied in plaister form, deliucreth the water between the skirine, and helpeth a hard and swollen Splene, as Dioscorides witnesseth.

The Radish well digesteth, beeing eaten with meate at supper, for it heateth the stomacke, yet the same taketh a strong breath, by sleeping some after meate.

The Seedes after the byusing drinke with white wine, doe cause dryne, and drinke with Vineger, aduageth the swelling of the spitt.

The iuice annointed on blbe cleers, both cleareth, and eateth awaye the Canker in them, the like personmeth the powder of the roote.

The Radish boyled with pulle water of Hony and water, and drunke warme, amondesth an cold cough: it remoueth the clammy Fleume of the brest, by spitting up in the daily drinke for certain daies.

The fresh rindes of the Radish well byalen and taken with Vineger and Hony procureth the patient to vomit, the like performeth the Seeds, drunke warme with water.

The Seedes haue a singular perspective in expelling, for which reason, these are right profitable to them hauing eaten pouthyomes, which they cannot digest.

If a round slice of the radish be applied on the plant, it doeth speedily cease the gripings in women, as the skillfull Hippocrates witnesseth.

The often eating of the radish, procureth plenty of milke to women giuing suck and parles.

The iuice of the roote drunk with Hony, sendeth down the Terms, and expelleth the woynes in the belly: the iuice gargled with Hony and Vineger, aduageth the swelling in the throat.

The

The commended helps of the distilled water of the Radish.

The roote finely chzed in the beginning of September, ought to be distilled in a Lin Limbecke, or rather glasse bodie in Balneo Mariæ. The distilled water of Radish drunke morning and euening vnto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, helpeth the digestion of the stomacke, the Kings euil, and killeth the woynes of the bellie: the Radish also receiued, cleanseth the stomacke of all clammy humors and other matters, which hinder digestion, this besides openeth all manner of stopping of the inner members and veines. This drunke in the like order and quantitie, doth extenuate the clammy humors in the lungs, and amendeth the swelling of the milke this also cleanseth the bzell of clammy humors and causeth a cleare voice.

The water drunke vnto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, both morning and euening, reconereth the poyson taken either in meate or drinke. The same quantitie drunke at a time profiteth against the Quartaine Ague, draweth downe the Termes, and sendeth forth the stone.

This water helpeth those which are stinged either with the Bee or Waspe, or benomed with the Spider, if they shall wash the grievous place with the same, and shall apply linnen clothes wet in it. This water helpeth the pricking & Ritches of the side, if the same be bathed with the water. The water dropped into the eyes, cleareth the humors falling which dimmeth the sight, it also remoueth the spots of the face, by the often washing with the water, this remoueth the yelow or blackish spots by heating, if the places be often rubbed with the same.

The water gargelled and reteyned in the month, amendeth the swelling of the throate, and blcers of the gums, so; this resolueth, consumeth and breaketh them.

The water often drunke morning and euening, chiefly at the going to bed vnto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, so; thirtie dayes together, not onely cleareth the kidneys and bladder, & the places which containe the stone, but breaketh the stone, & causeth vrine.

This water drunk so; three or foure weekes together, vnto y quantitie of three or foure ounces at a time, both morning & euening, reconereth the water betwene the skin, and sendeth the same forth by

the vyne, so that the patient refraineth the ouermuch drinking: so, how much the lesser hee drinketh, so much the more water by the vyne is sent forth, through which the patient is also sooner recovered.

What care and skill is required in the sowing and workmanly ordering both of the Parsnep, and Carote.

Chap. 17.



The seedes of the Parsnep and Carote, require one manner of diligence in the sowing, and to bee bestowed in a ground painefully digged, well turned in with dung, and woymenly dressed before: but the seeds to be committed to the earth, may not be bestowed in beds verie thicke together, to the end these in the increasing may grow the fairer and bigger.

The plants are in the like manner to be set, and at those times sown as afore vttered of the Radish, as sowne in December, Ianuarie, and Februarie, to serue in the Lent and spring time, but these better commended, to be sowne in the harvest time to enjoy them all the Lent.

The Gardener which would possesse faire and bigg roots, ought to plucke away the leaues often times, and to couer light earth on the heades, as afore vttered of the Radish: besides these growne to some highnesse, at the least so big as the finger, ought to be thinner set, and often weeded about, whereby the rootes may grow the bigger and sweeter in the eating.

The phisicke benefits and helpes of the Parsnep and Carot.

The vertues and propertise of these two rootes are in a manner like, and serue rather for the kitchen, then to the vse of phisicke, in that they be of a small nourishment, and lesser nourish then the Turnep or Kape doth.

The Parsnep root (by the agreement of the ancient) heateth in the middle of the second degree, and moistneth in the first, but this in causes of phisicke smally allowed.

The root is brought to a more temperament for the bodie, if so be

it be boyled in two or three waters befoze the eating, for on such wi.c handled, it harmeth the stomacke the lesse.

This other wise sodden (but in one water) ingendzeth wind in the bodie, through which it causeth and moueth a desire to the veneriall act, and often bled, ingendzeth euil bloud.

The root tenderly sodden in two waters, & remoued into a third, procureth vyne, aswageth the colicke passion, and sendeth down the Terins in women.

The garden parsnep, eaten with butter and pepper, and a litle salt, profiteth the Melancolike, and as Viralis writeth, this encrease th good bloud.

The Parsnep seade drunke, and applyed to the pziue place (as the learned Dioscorides writeth) draweth downe the Tearmes, helpeth the straightnesse of making water, recouereth the water between the skinne, and amendeth the stiches of the side or pleurisie.

This commended for the sting or bit of any venomous woyme or beast: this also applyed to the pziue place, draweth downe the dead youngling, the leaues shzed and applyed with hony, doth thoroughly cleare and amend the great eating in of blcers.

It is thought that no venomous beast may hurt the creature which beareth or carrieth the roote about him: and the roote hanged about the necke, doth profit against the swelling of the th:roat.

The garden Carote is thought to heate and drye in the third degree, but the leaues and floures especially, and many times the one bled for the other in phisicke causes.

There is an other kind of Carote (being red in colour) which may be eaten raw, but the same sodden with the Turnup, seemeth a pleasant and salutis dish: and this may in the like order be sowne, as the others aboue taught.

The Carote growiug of the owne accord, which of most men named the wilde, moze auaieth in the leafe and floure for phisicke purposes then the roote both: so that the leaues are to bee gathered to vse, when the same yeeldeth the floure, which after the separating of the roote, ought to bee dyed in a shadowie place, and kept in leather bagges for the whole yeare: for these haue the propertie of dissipating, consuming, and attracting, and is of qualitie drying by substance.

The

The heade bound about with the pouder of this hearbe, made sufficiently hote, amendeth a cold reume: the hearbe after the boyling in wine drunke, and a good quantitie of it after the steeping in wine and oyle for tenne dayes, be boyled so long, vntil the wine be wasted, and after the hard wringing forth of the hearbe, the whole set ouer the fire and a litle ware put to it, in making thereof a plaister: which applied, amendeth the paine of the stomacke, proceeding of wind through cold, the strangurie, and stopping of the vyne, and both the Collicke, and Gliacke passion.

This Carote boyled in wine, with a quantitie of figs to discretion, and the same drunke fasting, remoueth a drye cough: the decoction drunke doth likewise helpe the hard fetching of breath. If the head be washed with the water or oyle, in which the hearbe aforesaid is sodden, doth remone the fluxe of the head proceeding of a cold cause.

If three handfuls of this hearbe be boyled in wine, to which oyle added in the boyling, and applied to the bellie, doth remone winde and heate the stomacke: if a Syrrup bee made of the hearbe and floures, and the iuice of Fennell, and the same drunke morning and euening, amendeth without doubt the stopping of the Liuer and milke.

The hearbe boyled in Wallowes, and hearbe Mercurie, both in wine and water, and the same after the boyling, applied on the navel, amendeth the berings and grypinge of the bellie.

The vertues and helps of the distilled water of the Parsenep.

The hearbe with the root finely shred, ought to be distilled about the end of March, in a Tin Limbecke with a soft fire.

This distilled water drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, and the trembling members bathed with the same, doth in short time amend the shaking of them.

If the water enerie euening at the going to bed, be drunke vnto the quantitie of five ounces at a time, doth not onely mone forward the beheriall acte, but encrease the Sperme.

This water drunke vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time both morning and euening, recouereth in short time the straightnesse or painefullnesse in the making of water.

The

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

129

The diligence and skill to be vsed, both in sowing and ordering
of the Garden Poppie. Chap. 18.



The Garden Poppie (after the minde of the
Peapolitane Rutilius) ought to be committed to
the earth, in the moneth of September, if it bee
in a hote and drye place: but the Seedes in col-
der & moze temperate places, may be bestowed
after the middle of February vnto the ende of
Aprill, and sowed in beddes among the Cole-
worts.

The plantes come the better forward, if so be vine branches or
other boughs of trees be burned in the places, where you after minde
to bestow the Seedes. To be brieft, the seedes of the Poppie and Dil,
require the like order and diligence in the bestowing in the earth, as
afoze vttered, of the herbe Charwill, and Arache.

The phisicke benefites of the Garden Poppie.

The white Poppie as all the other kindes, coleth in the fourth de-
gree, and the seedes full ripe, before the gathering in the Sommer
time may be preserved for fve yeares.

The greene heads of the garden Poppie, boyled vnto the
thicknesse of Hony, profit vnto many griefes: this receiued procu-
reth sound sleepe, remoueth the cough, it also stayeth the flux of the
belly, if any anointeth the belly with it.

The Poppie Seede (after it bringing to poudre) mixed with new
milke or broth, and giuen to childzen to drinke warme, procureth
them to sleepe.

The seedes brused and spread on a tosse of Butter, do cause childzen
to sleepe: the seedes confectioned with Sugar, and eaten, do maruel-
lously preuaile, in procuring the weake patient to sleepe soundly.

The Sirrupe of Poppie helpeth it reume, cough, & lacke of sleepe,
by preparing it after this maner: Take of the new heads both of the
white and blacke Poppie one pound, of raine water foure pints, boile
these so long together, vntil a pint & a halfe remaine, to which after it
straining adde of Sugar, & the Bennites, of ech six ounces: these boile

Do

vnto

for the 100th year

vnto a height, according to art, & this they name, the simple Sirrope.

The compound is made after this maner: take of the fresh heads, both of the white and blacke poppy, twelue ounces of maiden heare, two ounces of liconrice, five drammes of luidax, thirtie in number, of lettuce seedes five ounces, of the Hallowes and Quince seedes an ounce and a halfe, these after the boyling in foure pintes of water vnto two, straine through a cloth, to which adde of Sugar and the Bennites one pound, making thereof a Sirrope according to arte: for this recoureth a dyse cough, the consumption of the Lungs, the Ricume, and debilitie of sleeping.

A plaister made of either seede, to which womans milke, and the white of an egge added, this applied on the Temples, procureth sleepe.

The Seede or Verbe of the white Poppy, (after the tempering with the oyle of Roses) applyed on an vlcer caused through a bruse, draweth forth the heate in it, and the same applied on a hotte Liver, greatly profiteth.

The powder of the white Poppy Seedes, mixed with oyle Olive, and annoynted on the chine of the backe, remoueth the griefe of the Joynts, and strengthneth them, the seedes after the brusing with oyle Olive, applyed in plaister forme about the head, not only procureth rest, but sound sleepe.

The patient which cannot sleepe, may bruse certaine heads, and after the heating, presse forth the Juice, with which washing the face, like auaieth. The heads of the greene Poppy, boyled vnto a thickenesse of hony, profite vnto many causes: for this taken procureth sleepe, remoueth the cough, stayeth the fluxe of the bellye, if any annoynt him with the same. The Juice of Poppy, mixed with the oyle of Roses, and annoynting the feete therewith, remoueth the rage of the Gout: the seedes of the white Poppy brought to powder, & mixed with the oyle of Violets, and the chine of the backe annoynted with the same, profiteth against the Ague, and heate of the Liver.

The comended vertues of the distilled water of the
white Poppy.

The aptest time for the distilling of white Poppy, is in the beginning of Iune, and that the herbe finely wyed be distilled in a Linne

Linne Limbecke with a soft fire.

This water profiteth against the red spots of the face, if the same be washed with it twice a day, this procureth white hands, if they be washed with it.

The distilled water drunke vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, before the going to bed, and anointing the Temples or beating beyes of the Temples, doth not onely procure quiet rest, but sound sleepe, this also vsed, mittigateth the paine of the head proceeding of heate.

This water applied with linnen clothes wet in it, extinguissheth any heate, and profiteth a burnt skinned through the Sunne, in removing the heate, by often applying of linnen clothes wet in it.

What skill, diligence and secrets is to be learned in the sowing and ordering of the Cucumber. Chap. 20.

The ancient in time past confounded or rather contrary matched the Gourds with Cucumbers, as the like also Plinie did, and Euthidemus the Athenian in his booke which he wrote of potherbes, named the Gourd, the Indian Cucumber, and Menedorus a follower of Erasistratus defineth two kinds of the same: the one, to be the Indian, which as he uttereth, is the Cucumber: and the other to be that, which is named the common Gourd. The Cucumber besides (after the sentence of Varro) is so named, for the crooking of it, and the Greeke phisitions named it both Sicyon & Sicy, for that it staeth and representeth (as Demetrius writeth) the venereal act, through the coldnesse consisting in it.

But leauing further to utter of the kindes, let vs come to the matter, in teaching what diligence is required, about the well handling of the Cucumber.

The Seedes after the minde of the Neapolitane Rutilius, desire to be bestowed in furrows not thicke together, and these raised well a foote and a halfe high, but in breadth three foote, and betweene the furrows must the owner leaue spaces of eight foote broad, whereby the Cucumbers (in the growing) may freely wander and spread abroad.

These after y^e coming vp need neither to be raked nor weeded about,

for that in their first coming vp, they ioy and prosper the better by growing among other herbs, of which these are greatly strengthened and ayded.

The plants creepe along, on the earth, and spredde into branches much like to the Vine, which for the weakenesse of the stalks, are raised on such wise to spread abroad on the ground, except these be otherwise shored vp in their growing, with pottes workmanly set in the earth, for the better staying vp of the weake armes and branches, that the fruites corrupt not by lying on the earth.

The Seedes for the moze part, appeare by the first or seauenth day after the sowing: being sufficiently moistned with stoe of water for that space and time, by a pot or pots of water dropping continually downe with a list or wollen cloth hanging forth of the mouth of the pottle, which manner of watering is named filtering.

This kinde of watering, is one of the chiefest matters required, in that the plantes prosper & come speediest forthward through the much moisture, in which they mightily ioy: Yet these are much hindered, and greatly feare the frostes and colde ayze. For which cause the plants ought at such cold times to be workmanly fenced with mattresses of straw diligently spread ouer them. The skillfull Rusticus writing of the workmanly ordering of the Cucumber, willethe the Seedes to be committed to the earth in the moneth of March, and for daunger of the colde frostes, to couer the beddes with mattresses of straw, vnto the middle of Maye, at which time the plants ought to be remoued, and set againe into beds well dunged and thicke layd for to runne forth and creepe abroad on the ground, but the plants yelde the moze: if they be bestowed in beds well filled with earth and dung, and these raised aboue a fote high.

In the bestowing of the Seedes in the earth, the owner ought to haue a care, that he set the Seedes in beddes a length, and these well two fote a sunder one from the other, herein considering whether the seedes be broken by the eight or tenth day following, which sounde eyther harde or broken, doeth denote a perfectnesse or goodnes of the Seedes: But these in a contrarie maner discerned soft, are vnprofitable, and to be cast away, in whose places others require to be set, prouing by the first or eight day, if the Seedes be

be broken or otherwise soft, which in a contrarie maner sene, be
stowe others in the places, as aboue taught.

The plants, after the coming vp, neede not to be weeded in any
maner, for as much as the plants better prosper and growe the sa:
rer, by coming vp among other herbes, of which these take a nou:
rishment.

If the seedes befoze the sowing, be steeped for two daies in shæpes
milke (as Rutilius willett, or in water and Honny, as Plinie instru:
cteth, or in Sugered water, which cause the plants, after their perfit
growth, to yeelde Cucumbers, both swæte, tender, white, and most
pleasant, as well in taste as in sight (as the singular Columella hath
noted) and befoze him the Greeke Florentinus, also after both, Pli:
nie and Palladius, to all which experience confirmeth.

The Gardiner which would possess Cucumbers timely and be:
ry soone: yea, and all the yeare thzough, ought (after the minde of the
Æapolitan) in the beginning of the Spring, to fill vp olde woꝝne
Baskets and Earthen pannes without bothomes, with fine sifted
earth tempered asoze with fat dung, and to moysten somewhat the
earth with water, after the seedes bestowed in these, which done
when warme and Sunny daies succede, or a gentle rayne falling,
the Baskets or Pans with the plants, are then to be set abzoade, to
be strengthned and cherished by the sunne and small shozwes: but
the euening appzoching these in all the colde season, ought to be set
vnder some warme couer or house in the ground, to bee defended
from the frosts and colde ayze, which thus standing vnder a couer,
or in the warme house, moysten gently with water sundꝝ tuncs,
and these on such wise handle, vntill all the frosts, Tempests, and
cold ayze bee past, as commonly the same ceaseth not with vs, till
about the middes of May.

After these, when opportunitie or an apt day serueth, the Garde:
ner shall bestow the Baskets or Pannes vnto the brimme, or deeper
in the earth well laboured and trimmed befoze, with the rest of the
diligence to be exercised, as asoze vttered: which done, the Garde:
ner shall enioy very sozward and timelier Cucumbers than any o:
thers.

This matter may be compassed, both easier, in shozter time,

and with lesser trauaile, if the owner, after the cutting of the waste braunches, doth set them in well laboured beds, for these in far shorter time and speedier, doe yelde faire Cucumbers.

This one thing I think necessarie to be learned, for the anoyding of the daily labour and paines, in the setting abroade and carrying into the house, either halfe Tubs, Baskettes, or Earthen Pannes, which on this wise by greater facilitie may be done, if so be the Gardener bestow the vessels with the plants in Whelebarrowes, or such like with Wheeles, for these to mens reason, causes marvellous easines, both in the bestowing abroade, and carrying againe into the warme house, as often as neede shall require.

The yong plants may be defended from colde & boistrous windes, yea, frosts, the colde ayre, and hote Sunne, if Glasses made, for the only purpose, be set ouer them, which on such wise bestowed on the beds, yelded in a maner to Tiberius Cesar, Cucumbers all the yeaere, in which he tooke a great delight, as after the worthy Columella, the learned Plini hath committed the same to memory, which euery day obtayned the like, as he writeth.

But with a lesser care and labour, may the same be perfourmed, as Columella writeth, if in a Sunny and well dunged place (sayth he) be sundry rodde set a rowe, aswell of the Osier as Bzemble, and these so planted in the earth, after the Equinoctiall of Harvest, to cut a litle within the earth, whose heads after the wider enlarging with a stiffe wooden pycke, to bestowe soft dung either within the pitches of the Osiers and Bzembles consisting in the middes: these done, to fixe or put Seedes of the Cucumber into the places, which after the growing to some bignesse, ioyne with Osiers, and Bzembles.

For the plants on such wise growing, are after not fed with their owne, but as it were by an other mother roote feeding, which by the same meanes yelde Cucumbers, that will indure the colde season and frosts.

The learned Plinie uttereth the same matter, admonishing here the reader, of y^e wrong instructions of Columella, although he seemeth to alledge an Autho^r, for which cause it shall bee to great purpose to heare the sentence of Plinie in this, who removing the error
of

of Columella vttred, that Cucumbers may be enioyed all the yeare greene, instructeth and willeth, that the greatest roddes of the bremble be set againe into a Sunny place, where these be cut, well two fingers long, about the Equinotiall Spring or middle March, and into the heads of these after large holes made, the Seedes to be bestowed lying especially within the pithes of the Bzemles, and filled with soft dung, which done, that fatte dung and fine earth, after the well mixing together, ought to bee thicke layde, and diligently heaped about the rootes, which may the better resist the colde.

But holwe so euer these ought to bee handled, it well appeareth, that Plinie doth disagree with Columella, in this instruction.

For Plinie willeth these to be set about the Equinotiall Spring, but Columella, about the Equinotiall Harvest, as the Neapolitan Rutilius interpreted and noted the same, to whom, as it shoulde seeme, he bare a fauour.

The plants much feare the Thunder and Lightning, for which cause the Gardener may not set nor remooue them at those tymes, besides, if the tender fruites bee not couered ouer with sheetes or thinne Couerlets. When such Tempests or stormes happen, they commonly after perish and wither.

The Gardener minding to possesse long and tender Cucumbers, ought to set vnder the young fruites growing, an earthen Panne, Bole, or halfe Tubbe filled with faire water, well five or sixe fingers: yea, halfe a foote distaunce from them, for these by the next day, will bee stretched vnto the water, so that setting the Pannes lower into the earth, or raising the fruites higher, yee shall daily see them stretched forth towarde the water, vnto the admiration of the owner, for the length of them, which depriued of their vessels of water, shall in a contrary maner see them winded and crooking, so much these ioye in the moisture, and hate the drought: the fruites likewise will growe of a maruellous length, if the flowres be put to grow within hollow Canes or Pipes of the Elder: but the same is otherwise to be learned of the Dyle, for as the Cucumbers so deadly hate

bate (as Plinie writeth) that setting vessels of the Dyle, in steepe of the water vnder them, they after bend and winde away, as disdain- ing the licour, which the owner shall well try and see that these to haue bended so crooked or winding as an Hooke, in one nights space.

But there must be a speciall care, as Columella (after the Greeke Florentinus) admonisheth, that no woman, at that instant, hauing the reds or monthly course, approacheth nigh to the fruits, especially handleth them, for though the handling at the same time, they se- ble and wither.

If thee in the place be like affected, thee shall after kill the young fruits, with her onely looke fixed on them, or cause them to grow af- ter vnsherie or els corrupted.

The Cucumber will yeelde fruites without seedes, if three dayes befoze the sowing, the seedes be steeped in Dyle Sesaminum or Sa- uin Dyle (as the Neapolitan Rutilius hath noted) or that the seedes afoze be steeped in the iuyce of the Herbe named of Plinie Culix, or as the same in Greeke may bee coniectured Coniza, in englishe fleabane.

The like shall be wrought, if the first armes or bzanches (after the condition of the vines) be on such wise digged about, that onely the heades of them appeare naked. which a third time to be like ba- red, if neede shall so require, yet such a diligence to be exercised in the same, that what bzanches growe out, and spreade on the earth, to be woorkmanly cut away, preserving onely the stemme and bzan- ches, that last shote forth: which on such wise handled, yeeld fruites with the onely Dulpes, hauing no seedes in them.

If the Gardener desireth to enioy Cucumbers, hauing Romane letters, strange figures, & skutchins or armes imbossed on the greene rinde without, he may, after the lively counterfaiting of formes on p-oulds of woode, bestow of the potters Clay or plaister of Paris, vnto the thicknes of a finger, which like handled, and cut into two parts, let dzie in a faire & hot place, that these may the sooner serue to vse, after bestow into the hollow mouldes, framed to a like bignesse & length as the fruits of p- young Cucumbers, which fast bound about, & so close togither, that no ayze breath in, let these on such wise hang, vntill the fruits haue filled p- mouldes within. which they toy to do,
and

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

137

and be ready to be gathered.

For the yong fruites of propertie, by the report of the skilfull, do so much desire or be so wonderfull desirous of a new forme, that into what woorkmanly vessel or mould the yong fruites be bestowed, they by an earnest will and desire, represent the figures counterfayted within, as the same found noted in a singular booke of Husbandry: which, why Rutilius may ascribe to Gargilius Martialis, I see no reason.

To be bryefe, as the comming of the mould shall be, such will the beautie of the fruites be: for many fruites have bin seene (as Plinie reporteth) which represented the image of a winding Dragon on them.

The owner minding to enjoy Cucumbers, a long time fresh and sayre, ought to bestow them in white wine lies vncorrupted or not turned, the vessel after the well pitching without, covered with a heape of sand, in some low Deller or vault in the ground.

The Cucumbers doe like continue a long time, if they be bestowed in a proper Pickle, made of water and Salt.

But the freshnes and delight of them, will a longer time be preserved, if after the husbandly instructions, the owner hang them so high in Barrells or Firkins, being a quarter filled or somewhat lesse, that these in the hanging doe in no maner touch the vinegar.

And the vessels shalbe diligently pitched about, which the owner prepareth to serue to this purpose, that the force of the vinegar, in no maner breatheth forth, for this by nature is otherwile penetrable & percereth, through the thinnesse of partes. And by this practise, may the owner at due times, all the winter through, make delectable Sallets of them.

The Cucumbers (by report of the skilfull) are the longest time preserved fresh and Greene, if so be these are bestowed in a Glass vessel, filled with the purest distilled vinegar, which if the owner will, he may also preserve a long time, if that he cut them off, whiles they yet be yong and small, and these bestow in a vessel of hote water to be scalded, which done, lay the Cucumbers abroade all the night time, to bee thoroughly cooled, after lay Cucumbers into a vessel filled with a sharpe Pickle, made of water and salte: for this will preserve them, by the former meanes, untill new doe come or may be had.

Ce

The

The ancient report, that a Pickle may be made, to preserve the Cucumbers and Gourdes a long time, with Salt, vinegar, Fennel, and Marjoram, if so be the Cucumbers in some vessel be layde by courses, and these above named, strawed betwene.

There bee others, which affirme, that these may a long time be preserved fresh and greene, if they be bestowed into the Pickle made of vinegar and Mustard Seeds wrought together.

The learned Plinie willeth the Cucumbers to be laid in a furrow made in a shadowie place, strewed after the forme of a Bedde with sifted sand, which on such wise handled, to be covered over with earth and dry Hay.

Atheneus reporteth, that the Cucumbers be biggest and fairest to the eye, at the full of the Moone, so that these receive an increase, according to the Moones light, though the watry moisture consist in them.

For which cause, if the Gardiner mindeth to enjoy fayre and bigge Cucumbers, let those be gathered at the full of the Moone, where in the decrease or wane of the Moone, they be then slenderer and not so sightly to sale.

To these, this Atheneus (favoured of Plinie) addeth, that both often it thundreth and lightneth, the Cucumbers so often (as striken with a feare) turne and bend.

This one thing is marvellous, that Spoiles and Nisses are exceedingly delighted with Cucumbers, in so much that they receiving the savour farre off, are by a marvellous delight allured to runne and breake into the place, where these many times grow. For which cause, the hedges and banks about must be strongly made, whereby they may in no maner, breake in to tread downe and waste the Cucumbers.

But the same is moze marvellous which in the Grecke instructions of Husbandry is noted, and of many hath bene proved, that if an Infant sick of the Ague, and sucking still of the Breast, be layed on a Bedde made of the Cucumbers to sleepe, being framed of like length to the Child, and that he sleepeth on the Bedde but a little time or a napp, he shall immediately be delivered

ured

more of the same, for while he sleepeþ, all the fenerous heate passeth into the Cucumbers.

If the owner would enioy Cucumbers, hauing but little water in them, he must digge a furrow, of a reasonable deapth, and the same filled halfe bp with chaffe, or the waste branches of Vines or trees, finely broken, coner ouer with earth, into which then bestowe the Seedes, of a reasonable distance a sander, and in the coming vpper water not the plants, or these moisten very litle, but in the rest order the Plants as afore taught.

As to the loosing and purging of the body belongeth: if the owner shall scrape the Seedes in the rootes of the wilde Cucumber byrned, eyther Roberbe, Earbith, Agariche, Elleboze, or any such like made into a Potable water, for three daies together, & for six daies together, after the Plants shotte vpper, doeth often moisten them with this liscour, he shall after enioy fruites, which will gently purge the belly.

And they may be caused to worke the stronger, if the rootes, while they send forth their branches, be digged about, and the smaller rootes vpperward cut away, in the places of which, a quantitie of the Elleboz, or some other purging simple layd, and the earth diligently couered about.

The Phisicke commodities and helpes of the Cucumber.

The Garden Cucumber, is moist and cold in the second degre, but the seedes dyed, haue the qualitie of drying in the first, or beginning of the second degre.

Dyphilus Carystus (a Physitian among the Grækes very well learned, and in Husbandry singular) disalloweth or rather forbade the Cucumber to be eaten at the beginning of Supper, as a meate incommodious to the Creature, in that the same (after the eating) procureth the person like to rest, as the Radish doeth, but this eaten last at the meale, worketh an easier digestion of the meate, where otherwise in many, this casteth vpper the meates eaten.

The tougher part inclosing the seedes, is of a hard digestion, but the softer Pulpe or substance within, is of a farre speedier and easier digestion, and profitable to the Cholerick and hotte & dry stomacks, being moderately eaten, so that this both cooleth, and extinguisht the thirst.

The whole substance of the Cucumber, may moderately be eaten with vinegar and salt of such, which daily exercise some labour of the Bodie.

But to such which labour not, or be Flematike, this altogether denyed, so as much as this greatly harmeth especially the stomacke and sinewes, yet hath the water (workmanly distilled) and the iurce cleare strayned forth, the properties of removing the Ague, and mitigating thirst.

The Cucumber is not to be eaten sodden, but rather raw, with oyle and vinegar, and the better fruites are those, which be gathered at the full ripenesse, or in the hand discerned somewhat light.

The seedes brused and drunke, do amend the strong saour of the byrne, but the decoction more anayleth in this, and allwageth the heate of the kidneys, yea it abateth the heate, and thirst of the fever.

The sayd Diphilus instructeth, that the seedes haue the vertue of cooling, and so the saue cause, hardly digested and sent by the wyndyngs of the bellie, yea these (as he affirmeth) doe cause a great coldenesse, ingender Choler, and abate the venereal act.

The seedes, after the brusing, drunke in eyther Cist or Wyllke, doe greatly profite such as haue an vlcered bladder. So these, and such as are payned with the cough, if so many seedes bee taken and bled at a tyme, as may handsomely bee taken up with thre of the fingers, and these after the brusing with Cammyne, drunke in wine, doeth in short time amende the same.

The sayd powder drunke in womans Wyllke, vnto the quantitie of thre ounces at a time, profiteth the frensy persons, and such molested with the perillous fyre Disenteria, yea this powder drunke with a like wayght of Cammyne seedes, in powder, recovereth the spitting by of corruption or matter.

The

The whole substance and meate of the Cucumber, hath the vertue of cleansing and cutting a sinder, of which the same causeth cleare bodies, and so much the more, if any after the drying, finely beating, and searling of the sinder with the same in steede of a cleansing powder.

The learned Galen touching of the use and properties of the Cucumbers uttereth an instruction worthy the learning, that although these (saith he) be well digested of the Cholerike, and that such without care, eat plentie or much at a tyme of them, yet they in the continuance of tyme, increase a colde and somewhat grosse humour in the vaines, which not able to be digested in them, doth after corrupt the soude bloode.

For that cause (saith he) I iudge it profitable to refraine & meates being of an euill iuyce and nourishment: although that those in certayne persons, may easily be digested: for to be not taking a care and regard of them, is a iuyce gathered (after a good distaunce of tyme) in the vaines, which allows as the same once putrified by a light occasion, doth immediately kinde and cause wicked fevers: these hitherto Galen of the incommodities of the Cucumbers.

What skill and secretes are to bee learned in the sowing and workmanly ordering of the Gourde.

Chap. 30.

ALl the kindes of the Gourdes, require the same trauaile and diligence in the bestowing in the earth, as afoze vttered of the Cucumbers, which after the large setting a sinder and often watering, appeare (for the moze part) above the earth, by the first or seventh day after the be-
sowing in beddes.

The weake and tender branches, shot vp to some height, and conueing by a certayne property in nature upward, require to be diuersly aided with poles to run vp in sundry maners, as either ouer a round and vaulted Harbour, to giue a moze delight, through the shadowe caused by it, and the seemely fruits hanging downe, or els by poles directed quite vpright, in which the Gourde (of all other fruits) most earnestly desireth, rather than to run byaunching & creeping on the
ground

grounde like to the Cucumbers:

The plants love a fat, moist, and dunged loess ground, as the *Politian* *Rutius* in his instructions of husbandry hath noted: If a diligence be bestowed in the often watering of them, the plantes require a lesser care and travaile, in that they are very much furthered, by the scope of moisture, although there may be found of those, which reasonably prosper with small scope of moisture, or being seldom watered, and that they of the same yeelde fruits of a delectabler taste.

If the owner or Gardener happen to commit seeds to the earth in a dry ground, and that the tender plants appears above the earth, his care shall then be to water them plentifully for the speedier shooting up after this manner; by taking certaine pots filled with water, into which tongues of cloth adose laide to the bottoms of the pottes, that these may the workmanlier distill and drop often on the plants, through the sloping forepart of them: which no doubt, profiteth greatly the plants in drye and hot seasons.

The longer and smaller have fewer seeds in them, and for the same more delectable in the eating: yea, these better accounted off, and solde in the Market.

The Gardener minding to commit of the Seedes to the earth, ought also to steepe them in a Boll or panne of water for a night, whereby the seedes apt to be sowne, may & surer be knowne, which he shall well perceiue by those resting in the bottome, of the cunninger sort preferred and bled, but the others swimming aboue, as vni profitable, and seruing to no vse, are willed to be thowne away.

The chosen seedes are to be set in beds two together with three fingers unto the middle jointes, and the sharper endes fixed upward, but the beds afore ought to be digged two foote deepe, and so many broad, and the seedes bestowed well three or four foote a sinder, one from the other (in these filled up with olde dung,) well turned in with the earth, or rather to procure them speedier to growe and yelde the fruite the sooner, let the beddes bee filled with hote horse dung, new taken out of the stable.

If the Gardener would possess Courtes of diuers formes, as long, rounde, and short, it becometh him to chuse and set the leedes accordingly. For those Seedes taken out of the necke of the Courde, shall

Shall the owner after the counsel of the singular Columella, learned Plinie and Rutilius, set in well dunged groundes, with the sharpe endes bpwarde. Which after the well watering (as aboue taught) yelde fruites, long in sournie, tenderer, and better esteemed. The Seedes taken out of the middes of the belly, and set into the earth with the big ender bpwarde, do yelde (after the hal bandly bandling, and watering) great fruites, rounde, and large, of which after the thorough drying, and meate taken out, be Wattels and other vessels made, to serue for diuers uses, in that these growe farre larger in the belly, than any of the other kinde.

The Seedes taken out of the bottome of the Turke, and set with the grosse or big endes bpwarde, do also yelde after the workmāly ordering, fruits both great and large, yet these farre lesser and shorter. And the Seedes in generall, in what place they bee sette, ought to be bestowed in earth well dunged, and the rather with hote horse dung, new taken out of the stable, if these bee set in the moneth of March. But the seedes in no maner, may be bestowed in low places, least showres of raine falling, hinder and corrupt the fruites, through the ouermuch water cloying and standing in the Alley or other lowe place: the plants shot vp to some height, oughte to bee diligently weeded about, and the earth heaped high vp, and when neede requyrez in the hote seasons, to water them often.

If the seedes happen to be set in a earth smallly laboured and holowe, when the plants be somewhat growne aboue the ground, the owner ought to dig away of a good depth from the young plantes, the earth rounde about, that the rootes may the frelier runne and spread abroad: the plants further growne & shot vp, may the owner erect to runne and spreade like to a vine, well a mans height.

If the plants happen to be annoied with the like or Garden fleas, the owner shall remoue & drie them away, by the onely setting of y herb Drganie, in sundry places among them, on which (if they happen to light) they either are incontinent killed, or caused to encrease but few after, as the Greeke writers of husbandry, in their skilfull practises witnes: out of which with diligence we haue also gathered these, that to y owner or gardner, may happily appere profitable: as the Courd (a matter somewhat strange) to yelde fruites without seeds,

If the seedes before the setting be steeped for thre daies at the least, in Sesaminum, or Spanin oyle, as the Neapolitan Rutilius uttereth, or in the iuyce of that herbe infused, named Conyza, in Englishe Fleabane.

The like may be wrought, if after the condition of the vine, the principallest and first steeke shot by, be on such wise digged about, that at onely the head of the same be left bare: which as it shall encrease, must the owner repeate: yea, a third time if neede shall require the same.

And in this doing, must the owner haue a care, that as the bzaunches spread forth (whether byright or on the ground) to be cut away, herein preserving onely that steeke, which shot forth last.

The Gourdes on such wise handled (as the Cucumbers afoze noted) will yelde fruits without seedes, possessing only Castilages, and a soft pulpe within. If the owner would possesse fruits timely and very soone, then after the instruction of the Greeke writers of husbandry, bestow in earthen pannes or olde baskets without bottoms fine sifted earth intermedled with dung, about the beginning of the Spring, in which the seedes set, sprinkle and moisten sundry times with water: after this, in faire and Sunny daies, or when a gentle shower falleth, set them abroad, but when the Sunne goeth downe, bestowe the baskets with the plantes within the house againe, and these like order so often (and water when neede requireth) untill all the frosts, tempests, and cold season be gone and past. After this as soone as opportunity and time will serue, and that a faire day be present, bestow all the baskets and pannes of earth vnto the byn, in well laboured and dressed beds, and apply that other diligence required, through which the Gardener shall possesse timely fruite, as well of the Gourde as Cucumber.

The same matter shall the owner bring to passe and cause, with lesser cost, trauaile, and time, if he cut away the waste bzaunches of the Gourdes, or tender shootes of the Cucumbers, for on such wise handled they speedelie yelde and send forth their frutes.

If the Gardener coueteth to enioy diuers formes on Gourds, or sundry caraders on Cucumbers, let him bestow þe floure or tender yong fruit of either, as the same shall yet be hanging on þe bzaunch, into a mould of like bignes as the fruit: which so handled, will after cause
the

whether the same be Gourds or Cucumbers, to possess on the upper face, the like figures or characters, as were afore imprinted within the mould.

For the fruit of either after the mind of Gargilio so much desireth a new forme, that it like representeth the Image or figure imprinted within the mould. Inasmuch that of what forme the mould of the Gourd shalbe fashioned, on such maner shall the fruit grow within the mould: And Plinie for confirmation of the same reporteth, that he sawe many Gourds fashioned in their full growth after the forme of a winding dragon. If the owner endeuoureth to possess long and slender Gourds, he must bestow the young fruits new growen, & hanging stil on the vine branches, either into a Trunck of wood, or a loge Cane boared throug all the ioyntes, which in time growing, will stretch and shote forth into a marvellous length. For the same substance which should encrease into a breadth, is caused throug the hollow pipe to stretch and grow slender, whereby the narrowness of the hole so hindering the bignesse of growth, procureth the fruit to run into a length, as the like Gourd by the same occasion, Plinie sawe to extend well nine fote of length. The like fruites altogether shall the Gardener purchase, if vnder the vines, he set of some deepenesse in the ground earthen pannes filled with water, & they distant well five or six fingers from the Gourds hanging downe. For by the morrow or next day shall he see the fruits stretched euen downe to the water, by which leading & handling of the pannes with water they may be caused to grow of a wonderfull length.

But the pannes for a time remoued or taken away, will cause the fruits to croke and winde vpward, so much of propertie they ioy in moisture, and refuse or hate the drouth: yet of the oile is otherwise to be learned, forsomuch as they deadly hate the same as Plinie writeth, which if in the stead of water it be set vnder the fruites, causeth them by the next day to winde an other way.

If this likewise they cannot doe, yet doe they writhe, and as it were disdaining the same croke vpward after the maner of a hooke, as a like forme of the fruit may be tried in one night space.

This one matter ought especially to be cared for, as Columella after the Greek Florentinus warneth, that no woman come or verie seldome approach nigh to the fruites of the Courdes or Cucumbers,

for by her onlie handling of them, they feeble and wither, which matter if it shall happen in the time of the termes, doeth then either flea the yong tender fruites with her looke, or causeth them to be vnsaue-rie, and spotted or corrupted within. The Gourdes determined to bee kept for seede, ought after the minde of Rutilius the Neapolitane to hang still on their vine, vnto the winter time, and cut or broken from the same, to be dried either in the Sun or in the smoke: for the seedes other wise are prone to putrisie, and not after profitable to anie vse. The Gourdes and Cucumbers will endure, and be kept a long time freshe and faire to the eye, if they be hid and couered with white wine lees, not ouer egre or so wze, in the hanging downe in pipes or hogs sheads. They be in like maner defended and preserved by bestowing them in a pickle or brine. But they will a long time continue freshe and faire (as the woorthie instructors of husbandry report) if so be they hang so high within the vessels, that they be nothing neare to the vinegar. And the vessels appointed for the onely purpose, shal diligently be pitched ouer and round about, least the spirites of the vinegar in the meane time breathe forth, which by nature other wise is penetrable, through the thinnesse of parts. The Cucumbers may in lyke maner be kept for a long time, if they shall be bestowed in a vessel of distilled vinegar: for on such wise they putrisie not, as hath been tried of the skillfull searchers of secrets.

Thus by these practises, may the owner enioy faire Cucumbers and Gourds all the winter to vse, which if the Gardener will, shall he also preserve a long time, if while the fruites be tender, he cut them off, and scalde them in hote water, and after laie them abroad all the night to coole, and bestow them on the morrow into a sharpe pickle of brine, made for the onely purpose, which on such wise handled, will maruelous well endure, vntill the new be come.

In this place commeth to minde, and that verie aptly, the same which Athenæus boasted, as touching his strange feast that he prepared for his friends, and especially in that he serued them with greene Gourds for a daintie dish, in the moneth of January, which so pleasantly saoured and eate, as if they had been new gathered, in a manner. Which like, by study and diligence of the Gardners that exercised this art, they supposed them to be preserved.

As the like Nicander long before Athenæus and many others report,

port, who will the Gourdes to bee first dyed in the aire, and stitched through the heads with a strong packthread, to be after hanged vp in the smoke, that the pots filled with them, may leysurely soke all the winter, and drinke in of the Wine.

At this day in France, through all the winter monethes, are the Gourdes hanged vp in the rofes of their houses, to bee preserued for daintie dishes greene, when occasion offereth to vse them, especiallis those which are named the Citrones, that far longer endure, and bee not so lightly subiect to putrifying.

The fruits of the Gourds, Melons, Pompons, and Cucumbers, may be caused to lose and purge, like to many others, if the seedes bee steeped for a night and a day in the licour made with Ruberbe, Agarrick, Turbith, Senz, Colocynthis, Scamonie, or other simple purging medicines, and those after the bestowing in the earth, watered for five dates together, and five times euery day. When the Gourde is felt vnpleasant, the fruites by the steeping, may after receiue what saour and taste the owner will, if the seedes befoze they be committed to the earth, be infused for a time in any pleasant licour, whether the same be damaske or muske water, for the plantes shooting vp of these, will yeld fruit of like saour, as well being sodden as rawe, after the condition of the Cucumber.

The like altogether may be wrought or caused without any art, if whiles the fruit is a seething, you bestow in the licour what taste, colour, or saoure you desire to haue. For the Gourde and Cucumber are of such a kinde, that they be void of any qualitie.

The rinde of the fruit of the Gourde growen to full ripenesse, becometh so hard as wood.

The Gourd planted in the ashes of mans bones, and watered with oile, yeldeth fruite by the ninth day, as the auntient Hermes affirmeth. Which man, for that he teacheth vaine matters, for the same cause he giueth me occasion to credite him weakely. Yet experience doeth many times cause the vncertaine to proue certaine.

The Phisick benefits and helps of the Gourde.

The fruit of the Gourde, is of a colde and moist temperament, and the seedes especially bled in medicine. That worthy Physician Crisippus with the Græks, condemned or rather utterly forbad the Gourds in meat, as vnprofitable for their coldnes to the stomacke.

That skilful man Diphilus contrarie affirmeth, that the Gourds boyled in water and vineger, do strengthen the stomacke.

The learned Galen writeth, that the Gourde in no manner may be eaten rawe, in that the same is vnpleasant to eate, but either sodden, roasted, or fried in a pan, is well commended.

The Græke writers of husbandry do report, that the Gourde doth loose the belly, and that the iuice of the same dropped into the griened eares, caused of heate, they affirme to profit, vnto which vse of it selfe, and with the Oile of Roses dropped warme into the eares.

The outward rinde pared away, and the meate with the kernels, not fully ripe, heated or parboyled in water, and after shzed smal like to the Cabbedge, and boiled with Butter, Onions, and a quantitie of Salt. This on such wise prepared and eaten, profiteth leane men.

Others after the cutting of the vnripened fruit into rounde slices, boile them with butter in a dish like Apples.

The wine standing for a night abroad, in the hollow of the freshe Gourde, and drunke with a fasting stomack, purgeth gently the bellie colliue.

The meat of the Gourde, after the seedes taken forth applied, helpeth the cornes of the toes and fete: the iuice of it boiled, and rubbing the mouth therewith, fastneth loose teeth, and allwageth the pain of them, proceeding of a hote cause.

The seedes of the Gourde cleane picked from their skin, being sodden in Barly water, Grained, and drunke, helpe the inflammations of the liuer, kidneys, and bladder, the impostumes of the breast, and prouoketh vrine.

If a sick person of the Fever, refuse to drinke of this water, a Sirrope then with Sugar, may be compounded of the same, which mightily profiteth all kindes of Agues.

The

The iuice of the peeces of the Courd, tempered with milke and vineger, in which a linnen cloth wet, and applyed on the Liuer, verie much allwageth the heat of the Liuer.

When the winter approacheth, the seedes ought to be taken forth of the fruite, and these rubbed well with salt, that the clammy humors may on such wise be remoued.

The seeds ought rather to be laide in a drye place, whereby the proper moisture may not corrupt them, and those seeds like prepared, will indure for thre yeares.

The peeces of the rinde of the Courd bzuisid, and annointed or applyed in plaister soyme on the heads of Infants, both allwage the inflammation or burning caused of the bzaine, the peeces or iuice of the same applyed, both like mitigate the burning Goute, and qualifie the inflammations of the eyes.

The Courde after the fine shzедding, applyed in plaister soyme, allwageth tumors and swellinges, the dry ashes applyed on burnings both marvellously auaille, the ashes also of the rindes, applyed on blcers of the priuie place, beginning to putrisye, both purgeth, and bringeth them to a scarre.

The iuice of the Courd, after the boyling with a litle hony and Pytre drunke, gently looseth the bellie, the same iuice mixed with the Oyle of Roses, and annointed on the ridge bone and Loynes, closeth the burning of Feuers, this besides annointed, helpeth the Shingles.

Here learne that the Courd roasted, or boyled in a dish or frying pan, is moze holsome, then raw, so that through the roasting, it leaueth a great force of waterie moisture, and therefore yeldeth a stronger and worthier nourishment.

The Courd sodden, requirerh a tartnes to be matched with it, for the same otherwise is felt vnsauerie and without delight, so that it better relisbeth, being matched with either salt, soure, or tart things that nearer agree to the benefit of our bodie, and the same ought to be on such wise prepared that it procure not the creature to vomit, as the singular Galen hath clearly offered.

The benefits and helpes of the distilled water of
the Gourde.

The chosen time for the distilling of Gourds, is when they be full ripe, for these then are to be finely shzed, and the kernels with the whole substance artely distilled.

The distilled water of the fruites, mixed with a quantitie of suger, drunke, not onely looseth the bellie, but ceaseth thirst, and helpeth the cough proceeding of a hote cause.

The said water drunke morning and euening, vnto the quantitie of thre ounces at a time, for fortie dayes together, doth maruellously helpe the stone in the kidneys.

This water drunke in the like manner for ten dayes together, purgeth the kidneys and bladder, and causeth vrine, this also drunke in the like manner, qualifieth the burning of Feuers, when no other medicine can assuage the same: this besides applied without, on the region of the heart, with linnen clothes wet in the same, like representeth the heat.

Of the care, helpe and secretes of the Pompons, Mellons
and Muske Mellons.

Chap. 31.



For the auncient both of the Greeke and Latin writers of husbandrie, attributed the Pompons and Mellons, to a kinde of Cucumbers which they confessed, very neare to agree with them, in that the Cucumbers, in their growth haue bene sene, to bee chaunged into Pompons, and Mellon Pompons, which two kindes of fruite, doe differ in themselves, especially in the forme and quantitie: for when these appeare to exceed in bignesse, they are then named Pompons, but they growing round, and in forme of an Apple fashioned, are by a bie-name of the Pompon & apple, named Mellon Pompon. For which cause Palladius nameth all this kind of forme of apples, Mellons, or as if a man should say hee named them apple-wise or Quince-like, which are not wont to hang, as Plinie writeth, but to grow round

on

on the ground, and they are then grown to a ripenes, when the stalke is parted from the bodie and a sweete sauour from the bellie striketh to the nose. Further those growing after the fourme of the Quince, which properly are named Pellons, haue a harder and tougher meat then Pompons, and they not onely enioy lesser winkles on the rind, but be dryer, grosser, whiter of flesh, and haue moze seedes then the Pompons.

The other kinde named Cytrons, bee in fourme and colour like to the Cytron, and the leaues of the bjaunches deuided into manie small parts after the forme of feathers or winges of Birds.

The other kinde named the winter Pompons, are nothing so bigge of growth, as bee the common Pompons of the garden.

But the best kinde of all, are the Pellons, next the Turkish Pompons, and those made sweet by arte, when the seeds befoze the bestowing in the earth, are for a night laide in water well mixed with Sugar, or in hony.

The Pellons and Pompons hardly come by in any Countrie, at due time of the yeare, without a labour, cost and diligence of the Gardener in hastening them forward. no: these caused wel to spread and yeeld befoze the great heat of the yeare be come, which season, some yeare, hapneth diuers and intermedled with cold, and either ouer dry, or ouer moist, which much hinder the ripening of them in the harvest time and toward the vintage. For which cause the Gardener ought to hasten the fruites forward by dung, and heate of the beds, which alwaies procure a moze health to persons. The seeds of Pellons to bee committed to the earth, ought to be such which haue bene kept within the fruit, vnto the full ripenes of the same: for these then taken forth of the Pellon bee moze worth, and reserue in them the proper substance within the bodie. If the owner would possesse the fruites of the Pellon timely, he ought alsoe to infuse the seeds in luke warme water, for fixe or ten houres, and those after to bestow in beds prepared, about the tenth day of March, well thre or foure foote distant one from the other, and the beddes to cast well two foote high, and so manie broad, and to fill them with olde dung finely broken, and with blacke earth sufficiently loose wrought togither, for on such
wise

wise handled, they yeld a bigger, fuller and pleasanter fruite. Certaine skilfull Gardeners bestow horse dung in beds, so hote as the same commeth forth of the stable, to cause the plants farre sooner to shoote vp, and they turne vpward sixe or ten of the seedes of the pom-pone with the sharp ends downwarde, as certaine do sowe or siew of them to come vp, and those they lightly couer ouer, with much beating or treading the earth downe on them. Rutilius in his husbandrie, willet the seedes, both of the Pellon and Pompon, to be thinne set in beds, in such manner, that the seedes be placed well two foote a sunder, and the places well digged and diligently turned in with fine dung, for the plants to be in a libertie, that they may spread at wil hither and thither, and are greatly holpen by other hearbes, growing among them, as the Cucumbers are, so that they shall neede but litle raking and plucking away of other hearbes.

After these, for danger of the cold and frosts, the owner may couer the plants and beds with light mattresses made of straw, or with mattes spred on rods, shored vp with the forks set at each corner of the beddes, or hee may for a semelier sight, lay abroad bozdes or Tables on pillars or other stayes of stone, set at each corner of the beds, in such manner, that the bozdes may bee lifted off, when the sunne shineth hote, and set ouer againe, at the going downe of the sunne, or when the cold aire is felt.

And as soon as the Pellon hath yeelded leaues sufficient great, the Gardener ought to water the same gently and softlie, with a list sharpened at the ende hanging forth, and broad at the other ende, resting within the Potte or Dish full of water, which on such wise continually moistneth (by the drops falling) the earth berie by.

The Pellons further growne, the owner ought to remoue, and sette the plantes againe, when the fruites are yeelded so bigge as Oranges, and this especially must bee done after the middell of Maye, when as the cold of the yeare is well spent, that otherwise might hinder the growth of them, and set well sixe foote distant one from the other, in beddes diligently dunged and laboured.

The Pompons purchase a far greater sweetnes, and pleasanter in taste, if the seeds afore be steeped for three dayes in water well mixed
with

The Gardenets Labyrinth.

153

with sugar, or in water and Honey mixed, or in like manner the fruits are found sweete in the eating, if the seeds be steeped in Cow milke, be then set in well dressed beddes.

The Pumpions in like manner will obtaine a savoure of Roses, if the seedes above be layed among dry Rose leaves for twentie or thirtie dayes together, and those after with the leanes, set in well dressed beddes, or the seeds steeped in Rosewater, or other odoriferous liquor, which after the drying in the shadow, then as afore bittered, committed to the earth.

As the worthy Mithour Florentinus in his Greke instructions of husbandry writeth, and after him the like that worthy Rusticus.

Here I think it a matter not to be omitted, that Cates by an earnest desire cometh the Pumpions, for which cause the divers must have a care to looke diligently thereunto.

To procure Pumpions to continue a long time without decaying, or corrupting, let the owner water the plantes for a time, with the juice of Houseleeks.

The other matters to be learned are fully taught in the secretes of the Cucumbers and Gourds, where many devices are uttered, that may be used common. As if the owner would enjoy timely fruits, and having strange soymes on them, big, large, and without seeds, let him diligently reade and consider the former Chapters, both of the Cucumber and Gourde.

The Bellons and Pumpions ought then to be gathered, when the stalkes begin to feeble, and the fruits to yield a pleasant savour in the eating, at which time the owner must diligently take heed of Cates, that have an earnest love and desire to them, as afore is bittered.

Also the Gardener slight to conceive, that those having the winter Pumpions, can never grow to a full ripenes on their beds, and for that cause, to procure them speedily to ripen, he must (after the gathering) hang them up in the roole of the house, and out of those, when they appear yellow withen.

The Phisick commodities of the Pumpions and Mellons.

It is learned report, that the Bellons coole and moisten in the second degree, yet those felt sweete in taste, are temperately colde. The seeds also are used in medicine, and possesse the same properties.

Diocles

Diocles Carilius (in libris salubrium) uttereth, the Pompon to be easie of digestion, and to comfort verie much the hart, yet the same yeldeth but a small increase to the bodie.

Diphilus reporteth that the meate of the Pompon doeth make fat, yet verie hardly digested, though colonselle mixed with the moisture of the same, besides it rendereth a small nourishment, and hardly moueth the belly.

Phenias reporteth, that the Pompon must bee eaten after the stomack is emptie, for that this otherwise is lightly conuerted into those humours, which of the same occasion hinder digestion, though the preeminents that it then obtaineth in the receptacle of the meate of stomacke.

Therefore he willeth the Pompons, to be eaten with a fasting stomacke, and to pause from eating any other meate, untill this in the stomack be halfe digested.

Diphilus writeth, that the Pompons eaten, doe greatly allwage vnnaturall heates of the stomack, and mitigate wicked Agues.

Galen reporteth, that all kindes of Pompons, haue the propertie of cooling, and enioy a large moisture, yet those not without a manifest qualitie of cleansing, in that the seeds maruellously cleanse the face of sun burning, of pimples, and foule spots.

This kinthour further addeth, that the same doeth yeld and cause a wicked iuice, although it may sometimes be wel digested of the stomacke.

Besides he affirmeth the same to cause Choller, and to yelds the plentie of moisture out of order.

The Pompons ought to be eaten for the first meate, but in such manner that such which are fleumaticke to drinke old wine after the same, and the Cholerick, to drinke some soure or tart thing after it, for on such wise handled, is all manner of harme auoided.

For this kinde of meate doeth lightly alter into Choller, or flegme, for which cause the ouersweet Pompon doeth offend the Cholericke, and the fruit vnripe the fleumaticke.

Many woothy men prefer the long Pompons before the rounde, yet doe all the kindes moue or loose the belly, and cause vyne, so that they shall be ripe. For which cause they are iudged profitable for the kidneys, but the seeds more auaille, in so much that stones there prepared

pared they marvellously expell.

The outward rinde of the Pompon applied to the forehead doth effectuously assuage and stay the running of the eyes.

Such which haue a hotte stomack, and encombred with Chol-
ler, are greatly harmed, if they drinke wine after the eating of the same,
in that of the wine nature it is lightly caused, and the wine imme-
diatly increaseth it more, and causeth a sharper humor in such bo-
dies, and apt to vomite: yea this also extenuateth grosse and clau-
my humors, yet doeth it well agree, that the stomaticke rate of the
Pompon, for as much as in the same is a substance tender and
soluble, that is, the same which is next to the seede, for this doeth not
lightly corrupt.

The persons which eat of the Pompons, may not immediately
eat any other meate after them, in that those both corrupt and alter
the same eaten.

All the kindes of Pompons prouoke vomiting, in bodies prepa-
red, except the meate enjoying a good iuyce, be eaten immediately
upon, for they on such wise, moue the spending downwards.

The greater number of Whistons write, that those eaten, doth
mitigate the venereal act, and do abate the generall seede.

The seedes properly cleanse the face, if the skinne be sundry times
washed with the decoction of them: the Pellons (as Galen reporteth
in lib. de facultatibus alimentorum) haue the propertie of clen-
sing, for which cause they may aptly cleare sunnie spots, pimples,
and other foule spots both on the face and bodie.

The seedes of the Pellon cleane picked from their upper skin,
and diligentlie brought to powder with Beane flour, this after the
artely mixing with Rosewater, and dyed in the sunne like cakes,
dissolue in faire water, washing the face sundry times with it: for it
marvellously clenseth, and procureth with wine a cleare face, yea
the same mundifieth all foule spottes on the skinne.

The seedes also haue the propertie of causing vyne, yea those
purge both the Lynes and kidneys, but the seedes more auaille in
the Lynes, than in the Bladder, so that a mightier remedie must
be inuented for the Stone in the bladder, than for the Stone of the
Lynes and kidneys.

The rootes of the Mellons, not only cleane, but heale the bites and
of matter, being applied with Honey in plaister forme.

Many there be, which eate the Mellon with vinegar, but to it they
adde also mire, the Pennyrolall and Onions, by which the harmefull
force of the cold, might so be tempered.

Dysphalus writeth, that a little peece of the Mellone put into a pot
with ment, causeth the speedier boiling of the Pettles of Spumacose
or the slip of the fig tree, on such wise ordered.

The commended helpes of the distilled water
of the Mellons.

The best time for the distilling of Mellons, is when they bee
thoroughly ripe, which theyeode small, distill after art, about the
Haruest time.

The distilled water of the Mellons drunke, helpeth singularly the
stone, procureth urine, and clenseth the kidneys, the rather, being bled
both morning and evening, for three or foure weekes together, unto
the quantitie of three or foure ounces at a time.

The saide water, for a time drunke, not only cooleth the Liver, but
cooleth and extinguisbeth all inwarde heates not naturall, yea this
tempered with Sugar and drunke, ceaseth maruellously thirst.

The water drunke, in like maner abouesaide, amendeth speedely
an old cough.

The water applied without the bodie, with linnen clothes wet in
the same, not only expelleth the heats, but the swellings of the bodie,
wheresoener those shall happen.

The water applied without the bodie, with linnen clothes wet in
the same, not only expelleth the heats, but the swellings of the bodie,
wheresoener those shall happen.

The water applied without the bodie, with linnen clothes wet in
the same, not only expelleth the heats, but the swellings of the bodie,
wheresoener those shall happen.

The water applied without the bodie, with linnen clothes wet in
the same, not only expelleth the heats, but the swellings of the bodie,
wheresoener those shall happen.

The water applied without the bodie, with linnen clothes wet in
the same, not only expelleth the heats, but the swellings of the bodie,
wheresoener those shall happen.

W^here the instructions about the sowing and sowing of sundrie phisicke
herbes, to these of the greatest number of fragrant hearbes
and pleasant flowers, and first of the blessed
Thistle. Chap. 32.



Where afore we have sufficiently written of the apt placing,
and workmanly ordering of the most hearbes and frutes,
both for the pot and sallets, and of their benefits for the vse
of phisicke: in this part following (for a further encrease and comfort
of the simple) we purpose to entreat not onely of the artely placing of
sundrie phisicke hearbes: but to what vles these serue for the aide and
benefit of health.

And of these we intend to begin with that worthe hearbe named
the blessed Thistle (for his singular vertues) as well against popples,
as the pestilent ague, and other perillous diseases of the heart: which
to many at this day is very well knowne although great contradi-
ctories have bene amongst the ancient phisitions, about the true de-
scription of the hearbe: for both the name and forme of the hearbe, doe
declare the same to be a kind of thistle: yet the learned Ruellius writ-
ting of the blessed thistle, saies neuer to be trosp, and faithfuller de-
scribed the forme of the hearbe: in y^e he affirmed the same to haue a big

stake, and leaues striped with prickles (after the condition of *En-
dine*) the flowre yellowish, and seedes small, contained within a soft
downe, (as in the other *Thistles*;) and that they be late ware ripe.

This herbe named the blessed *Thistle*, requireth to be sowne in a
well laboured ground, and the seedes ought to be committed to the
earth in the first quarter of the *Aprill*, but those not to be bestowd
in beds, above three fingers deepe.

The herbe also loveth and well prospereth comming up among
wheate.

The Phisicke benefits and helps of the blessed *Thistle*.

The herbe of quality is hote and dry, which the bitter taste of the
same well demonstrateth, besides it doleth somewhat digesteth:
the herbe hath the nature and property of opening the stopping
of members, of pearcing and causing vyne.

The blessed *Thistle* either eaten or drunke delinereth the patient
from the mighty paine of the head which bereth about the eyes: this
also putteth away goodness of the head, restoreth (by a like reason)
memory lost, the hearing, and diseases of the Lungs.

The leaues brought to powder, and drunke in wine, consume and
send forth the steume of the stomack, but the leaues are the better &
handsomer taken, if of the powder pilles be made.

This in like maner purgeth the breast and blood, and very much
profiteth the consumption of the Lungs: the leaues boiled in wine,
and drunke hote, doth cease gripings, prouoke stouate, break yllone,
and help the monethly termes.

The herbe for a time used, comforteth the vyne and sight, not on-
ly if the same be eaten, but if the eyes also be annointed therewith.

When the iuyce of the herbe cannot be had, then let the powder,
or the herbe it selfe dried, be steeped for a night in water, and the eyes
washed with the same. The iuyce also dropped into the eyes, remo-
ueth the blood consisting in them.

The blessed *Thistle* restraineth or stoppeth the bleeding of the
nose, or mouth, if the herbe be applied to the place, from whence it
runneth.

The powder of the same herbe purgeth the Vula, the Gales, and
the throat.

throats, and causeth that the patient may the easier cast and spitt
forth scume and grosse humours.

The herbe drunke in wine, amendeth a weakes stomack, procureth
an appetite to mente, and abateth the heate: yea, this consumeth the
euill blood, and engendzeth the good.

If the herbe shall be boyled in water, and drunke, the same con-
sumeth euill humours, and preserveth the good, this boyled in wine
and drunke, prouoketh sweate.

The herbe drunke boyled, or rawe with wine, breaketh the stone,
the same eaten, strengthneth the palse members, and recovereth
the exulcerated Lungs.

The blessed Thistle boyled in the water of a healthfull male child,
drunk, profiteth the dropic persons, healeth the plague, and dissol-
ueth all impostnaies: yea, this remoueth the Canker and falling
sickness: the pouder of the leaues, vnto the quantitie of halfe a Tal-
nutte-shell at a time drunke in wine, is a most present remedy a-
gainst the plague, if the same shal be receiued within foure & twenty
houres space of the time griened: If wine be boyled with the herbe,
and drunke, profiteth the like: this by a like maner receiued, amen-
deth the rotten Feuers of the stomacke, and such encumbered with
the feuer Quartane: the downe proceeding of the stolmes of the
blessed Thistle, applied on deepe cuttes, and newe wounds, doth in
short time cure them without paine.

The pouder of the herbe mixed with meale, and a plaister em-
ployed of the same with hot vinegar, helpeh the pushes and other
swellings of the plague: the herbe cureth any maner of burning,
and the blisters proceeding of the same: if afoze dried, and mixed
with the proper iuyce it be applied on the places,

This herbe drunke with white wine, remoueth the Collicke, and
putteth away scabbes: the herbe chewed in the mouth, amendeth
a skincking breath: the herbe also bruised, and applied on botches
speedely cureth them: yea, this recovereth the defaults of womens
places, and causeth the termes.

The bite of venemous beastes may be halpen, either with the
iuyce, or decoction of the herbe in water, the pouder of the herb eaten
or drunke, helpeh stiches in the side, and the pleurisie: this also profiteth

teth infants incombred with the falling sicknesse, and women.

Many worthy physicians affirme, that the powder or iuice, or the decoction of this hearbe doth expell al manner of poisons: The example of which matter, Hieronimus Tragus (in his Herball) learnedly uttereth, where he reporteth that there was a certaine young maide, which unknowing thereof, did eate poison in an Apple giuen to her, whose bodie incontinent swelled, and no medicine could allwaie the swelling, vntil that the distilled water of this hearbe was ministered to her, which in short time mitigated or abated the swelling, to the wonder of manie, so that on this wise the childe was deliuered from all peril of the poison.

A like historie reported of others, that a childe happened to sleepe in the field open mouthed, into whose mouth an Adder crept and went downe into the bodie, but after two ounces of the distilled water was ministered, the Adder incontinent crept forth again by the fundament without further harme or hurt vnto the childe. Therefore against all poisons, they affirme the powder, iuice, decoction, or distilled water of this hearbe, to be a singuler remedie, applyed either within or without the bodie: but after the taking either of these, the patient ought to be diligently couered with clothes, that he may well sweate for three houres space.

The wine made in harness of the blessed Thistle, and drunke in the time answerable, profiteth & helpeth all the griefes before uttered.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of the blessed Thistle.

The time and order of distilling of the same, is that the hearbe alone, about the end of May be distilled.

The water distilled of the blessed Thistle drunke vnto the quantitie of two or three ounces at a time, both morning and evening, purgeth away head-ache, comforteth memorie, helpeth the goodnesse of the head, and recouereth especiallie al the griefes of the eies, although they be but washed with the same.

The water in like manner taken, profiteth such being in a consumption of the bodie. The water in like quantitie drunke both morning & evening, breaketh the stone, & cureth any burning, by often applying linnen

It in new clothes wet in the same.

The patient molested with the Quartaine or any other Ague, by taking three ounces of the distilled water of the herbe fasting, well a quarter of an houre before the fitte of colde beginning, and lying downe to sweate, be well couered with clothes: shall within certaine fittes so using himselfe, be deliuered either of the one or other Ague, the like both the decoction of the herbe or the powder drunk with wine.

Against eating Cankers, or any other putride blcers, there is scarcely to be found any other worthier than the leaues, the Juice, decoction, or water of the blessed Whistle. And notable diseases hath the herbe recovered, especially in women, whose breasts were eaten and consumed with the Canker, even vnto the bare ribbes, by cleansing first the places with this water, & applying after the powder of the herbe, which on such wise handled, healed them in short time.

And Bathes are profitably made of this herbe, for the dissolving of the stone, and prouoking of the Veneres.

VVhat care and secrets are to be learned in the sowing and setting of the herbe Angelica Chap. 33



The herbe Smyrniū, which at this day of all the phisitions & poticaries through out Europe is named Angelica: this when in the first yere it shall come vp of the Seede, yeldeth stalkes of a fote and a halfe high, a finger bigge, rounde, tender, smooth, and bending backe to the earth: these also deuided and spread forth into two, three, and many times foure smaller stalkes or armes, in whose toppe are leaues in forme like to the leaues of the Smallach, but farre greater, and those diuided into three partes, sharpe fashioned at the ende, and growing vnto twelue fingers in height and breadth, and greene all the winter.

In the second or third yere, the stemme shooteth vp out of the middle of the leaues, and in height two or sometimes three cubites, increasing within a thombe bignesse for the moze part, round, ioynted, whitish and smooth, & as the same were sprinkled with dusky spots and hollo to within, beset also with leaues in ioynt forme, much lesser than the abovesaid. This also hath litle branches, and certaine stemmes

Stemmes shooting forth, in whose toppe are great tufts, well fine
or six inches broad, and those in forme imbossed round, and full of
whitish floures, in which do after succede two seedes, conioyned to-
gether, long, cornered, and of an albie white colour: those also con-
tained within the huske, be long, plaine, blacke without, white
within, and the tough kernell couered with a rinde or pulling sharpe
edged. This encrease in roote many times so bigge as the hand
can claspe about, and sometimes bigger, yea it sendeth forth the
roote, before the stemme be come vpp, which roote encrease in
yeres well a foote of length, or into many parts deuised, being
blacke without, and white within, bigge, soft, and full of Juice,
which being cut sendeth forth a yelow Juice or licoure, from the
inner side of the rinde, and a like licour is contained in the veyns of
the leaues, but the same more watery.

The roote, seedes, and leaues possesse an eger taste, fretting the
tawes, somewhat bitter, thinne, and aromatique or sweete smelling.

The most effectuous of all the partes, is the proper licoure next
the seedes, then the roote, last the floures and leaues.

The herbe Angelica togeth to be sown in a well laboured earth,
and the same rather dry than moiste, for the harming by woymes,
after the coming vp, this requireth to be diligently weeded about,
and seldome watered. This Angelica flourisheth and beareth
floures in the moneths of July and August.

The phisicke commodities of the Angelica.

The herbe of qualitie is hotte and dry in the third degree. It openeth,
extenuateth, and dissolueth.

This hath speciall properties against poysons, it cleareth the
blood and the body.

The roote is soueraigne against the plague, and all manner of
poysons, the like doth the distilled water of the roote preuaile.

The powder of the herbe, vnto the quantitie of halfe a dramme,
with a dramme waight of pure Triacle, given in four or fife
ounces of the distilled water of the same, and the patient well coue-
red to sweate, both maruelously helpe the infection of the plague,
and couaile agues or sweating.

And

And so; lacke of Triacle, may a whole dramme of the powder be ministred.

The roote of the herbe (after the infusing in vinegar) applied to the nose, or the powder of the roote drunke sometimes fasting in wine, very much availeth against a pestilent ayre.

The distilled water of the Angelica, or powder of the roote, ceaseth gripings of the belly proceeding of cold, if the belly otherwise be not costive. To be briefe, the distilled water and powder of the roote, recovereth al inward griefs of the body, and in the pleurisie or stiches of the sides, this is profitably ministred. The powder of the Angelica (or as some write the distilled water of the herbe) helpeth ruptures, and the diseases of the Lungs, it putteth away gripings of the belly, amendeth the strangury. sendeth forth the yongling and Vermes, and dissolneth all inward swellings of the body.

The roote boyled in wine, or water and hony, and drunke, prevaileth in all the abome said griefes, being in due order ministred. The Juice bestowed into hollow teeth, stayeth the running of them: the water of the herbe dropped into the eares, doth like availe in the same. This also amendeth the dimnesse of sight. The leanes of the Angelica wrought with the leaves of Rue and Honny in a plaister forme, and the same workmanly handled, doth not onely heale the bit of a madde Dogge, but the sting of venemous woymes. This plaister applied on the head of the patient sicke of the ague, doth in short time draw to it, all the heate of the fever. The distilled water, Juice, and powder of the herbe, workmanly applied in olde deepe woundes, doe cleanse, and regenerate, or renewe flesh in the places.

The distilled water applied with linnen clothes wet in it, doth marvellously assuage the ach of the hippes and gout, in that the same consumeth soft and clammy humors gathered.

Many other vertues of this herbe may be gathered by the former helps uttered.

The seedes have like properties, as the roote possesseth, the wilde Angelica is weaker in vertue, but boyled in wine and applyed in plaister forme, doth especially cure new and old blcers.

What care and diligence is required in the artely sowing of
the herbe Valerian, Chap 34.

The Valerian groweth vp with a long and high stemme, toynted and hollow, bearing on the toppe a tusse, and flowers purple mixed with a whitenesse, or white mixed with a rednesse, after the forme of D;gany, the roote as bigge as the little finger, and white, with many other small rootes branching in the earth, and these yelowish of colour, sweete in sauoure. And this doth Hieronimus booke report, to be true Valerian, and that rare to be found, which for the rarenesse, is at this day solwen in many Gardens. The Valerian commeth very well vp, being bestowed in a moist and well dunged ground, and the hearbe after the comming vp, requireth to be often watered, vntill it hath yeelded a high stemme.

The phisicke benefites of the Valerian.

The hearbe of qualitie heateth in the third degree, and dyeth in the beginning of the second, and the roote especially serueth for the vse of phisicke.

The roote of the Valerian brought to powder, and druncke in wine, prouoketh sweate and vyne, the like performeth the roote it selfe, being boyled in Wine: yea this also amendeth the paine and stiches of the sides and backe.

The roote dried may be kept for three whole yeeres, and gathered especially in the moneth of August.

The powder of the roote of Valerian, mixed with the white belle, bo; or nasewort, and the flower of wheate, this in apt places layed, killeth mice. The roote boyled in white wine with fennell and parcels seedes, both mightily prouoke the vyne, colde, helpeth the paines in the sides, and moueth the Termes.

This also preuaileth against popson, and the plague, by drynking of it.

Certaine do boyle the roote of Valerian, with fennell, Annise seedes, and Licourise, for the cough and straightnesse of breath.

The

The greene Herbe and freshe roote brysed, and applyed, doth mitigate the paine of the heade, Raze fluxes, and profiteth the shingles.

The flowres or roote boyled in wine, and dropped into the eyes, procureth a clearnesse of thym, healeth the great piles in the fundament, and other blcers, but this especially amendeth the dimnesse of sight, as Ieronimus booke witneseth.

The worthy vertues of the distilled water of the
Herbe.

The convenient time of the distillation of the same is that the roote, herbe, and stem, with the whole substance be shzed together, and distilled about the ende of May.

The distilled water of Valerian, drunk vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, both morning and evening, and linnen clothes wet in it applyed vpon, doth in short time amend blcers, olde soares, and those causing swellings: yea, this auailleth against the piles, by applying linnen clothes wet in it.

The sayd water drunk in like quantity, both morning & evening profiteth the creature hauing any bone broken: this also helpeth a rupture, or a body broken, and dropt in the eyes, cleareth them.

The distilled water of the valerian, drunk vnto the quantitie of a spoonfull at a time, every morning fasting, doth expell the longe wormes in children.

This water drunk in like manner, as afoze bitered, profiteth against poison, and a pestilent ayze: it healeth new and olde wounds, cleareth blcers and impostumes within the body, and remoueth the ache of the hips.

The distilled water orderly drunk, procureth cleare eyes, remoueth the paine in them, and prouoketh sweat, this poured into troubled wine, causeth the same clearer and purer to be drunk.

The sayd water asswageth the paine of y members, proceeding of an vntemperate colones, by daily annointing the members with it.

¶ 3

The

The vertues of the distilled water of the rootes
of Valerian.

The distillation of this water is to bee wrought, from the fifteenth day of August, vnto the eight day of the moneth of September.

This distilled water drunk, as afoze taught, both remoues poison, and profiteth against venemous beastes.

The distilled water drunke fasting, vnto the quantitie of six ounces at a time, befoze the fitte commeth, delinereth the Quotidian Ague.

The sayd water in like quantitie giuen, and both arroynted, and applied with linnen clothes wet in it, amendeth the Sitches in the sides.

When two persons at variance, shall drinke a quantitie of this water out of one cup together, it both after procure them friends, & louing one to the other.

The diligence required in the bestowing
of the herbe Bytonie.
Chap. 35.



The Bytonie is an herbe, hauing a slender stemme, and foure square, growing in many places a foote and a halfe high, the leaues long and soft, and indented round about, like to Oken leaues, and sweet smelling, among the which, greater leaues are those growing nigh to the roote: in the top of the stems is the seede, eared after the maner of Sauerie, the rootes spreading small, and beareth purple floures.

The herbe Bytonie togeth to be solpen in a moist & colde ground, and by a brick or stone wall to enioy the shadow of the same, for the herbe much delighteth to stand in the sunns beames.

The

The Phisicke commodities of the herbe Bytonie.

The herbe Bytonie (after the minde of the learned) is hote and drie in the first degree complet, or in the middle of the second, and hath the nature of cutting a sunder, which is manifest of the taste, that is soure and somewhat bitter.

The herbe boyled with the floures in wine and drunk, stayeth belching, the ratynesse of stomack emendeth, and the soure restings correcteth. The selfe same may the distilled water, or a confection made of the floures with suger, or the powder of the drie herbe if false, or ministred with honny.

The herbe drunk in wine, very much profiteth the diseases of the Spatrice: and this to be briebe, is anaplable to all inward griefes of the body, in what maner soeuer the same be taken. For this given in Rulle vineger vnto the quantitie of a dramme, profiteth in the sending forth of the harmefull humours of the Stomacke, Liver, Spilte, Kidneys, Bladder, and Spatrice.

The person which feareth to haue drunk poison, by taking a dramme waight of powder in wine, shalbe deliuered of the harme, both by vrine and slege.

The herbe (after the boyling in water) drunk, profiteth the phrensie persons, such hauing the falling sicknesse, the Paultie, and ache of the hips.

The herbe helpeth digestion, if any after supper, eateth vnto the bignesse of a beane of the same, being afore boyled in honny, this also steeped in wine for a night, and drunk, stayeth vomiting.

The herbe boyled in wine and drunk, expelleth the Ague, and ministred to the waight of two grammes with Hydromel, sendeth forth the water betwene the skinne, and manny humours.

The powder of the herbe to the waight of a dramme drunke with wine, doth speedely help the Jaundise, and sendeth downe the Terres.

The Bytonie boyled in wyne and strayned, if wyth three grammes of (Hiera Pigra Galeni) mixed and drunk fasting, gently purgeth the belly: the herbe boyled with Honny, recovereth the consumption of the body, and matterie spittings of the Lungs.

The

The herbe bruised, and applied in plaster forme on the hurt of the head, as witnesseth Apuleius, doth by a marvellous speedines close and heale the same: yea, this hath such a propertie, that it fastneth broken bones, and by his force draweth forth, and dissolueth the clotted blood.

The powder of the herb given to the waight of a dramme in wine, stayeth the spitting vp of blood.

The leaues bruised and applyed in plaster forme on the eyes, doth speedely help the eyes bruised or hurt by a stripe: the rootes also of the herbe boyled to a third part in water, and the eyes suppled with the same water, do speedely remooue the paine of them.

The iuyce of the herbe dropped into the eares with the oyle of Roses remooueth all maner of payne in them, the same amendeth the hardnesse of fetching breath, if the breath be annointed therewith: the herbe eaten, causeth the clearenesse of the sight.

The bytonie boyled in olde wine and vineger, vnto the consumption of a third part, and gargelled in the mouth, remoueth toothach.

This drunk in wine recouereth an euill colour of the body, the same boyled in wine and drunk, they affirme of experience to profit the diseases of the spleene.

The eating of two ounces of the powder with Honny for eyngh daies togither, allwageth the cough, two drammes of Bytonie and one of Plantaine, ministred with foure vnces of warme water before the fit of colde, putteth away the quotidian.

Three drammes of the powder, with one ounce of pure Honny, geuen in three ounces of warme water, before the fit coming, doth maruellously remoue the fits of the Tertian and quartane ague.

For griefe of the bladder, take foure drammes of Bytonie, of Parsely rootes three scruples boyled, but the rootes of the Parsely afore boyled in a pinte of water vnto the consumption of the halfe, and then the Bytonie added to, and giuen to drink, which so belinereth the paine, that neuer after it cometh againe.

The Bytonie drunk in wine, dissolueth the stone, and helpeth all painfull griefs of the bladder: yea, this is most effectuous in strangurie: certaine perswade, for a singular remedy against the stone, to drinke the powders of Bytonie, betwayne, and parrow by equal portions in water.

The

The rootes of Bitony boyled with the leaues vnto a third part away, and drunke in water, with the Herbe applied alone, doe marvellously assuage (of experience knowen) the paine of the Gonf. The leaues heated betwene two new Lyles, and applyed to the forehead, do mitigate the griefe of the eyes and stay the running of them, in that this among the other herbes, which they apply to the head, obtaineth a principalltie.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of Betonie

The time of gathering, and distilling of the Betonie, with the whole substance, is about the end of May.

The distilled water of Bitonie, as Hieronimus Brunsvicensis, a most expert Herbarian witnesseth, drunke vnto the quantity of foure ounces at a time, both morning, none, and evening, putteth away the dysp sie, Jaundise, and any ague.

The distilled water helpeth the diseases of the kidneys, mylt, and Lungs, and all those griefes tofoze vttered: the water either drunke or applyed on the places with linnen clothes wet in it, if the euill or griefe shall appeare without the body.

The skill and diligence required in the artly bestowing of the
Herbe Louage, Chap. 16.



The Louage is to grow by Wallayes, and vnder the Cinesing of an house, it also prospereth in shadowy places, but especially delighteth to growe neare to a running water.

This in the growing, sendeth by a long and slender stem, like to Dyl, toynted, with leaues round about like to the Melyote, swete sauouring, tenderer and softer, towards the toppe smaller and much more deuised. In the toppe of the stem groweth a tusse, in which consisteth the seede, blacke, hard, and long, like to the Fennell seede being sharpe in tast, and sweets in smelling, it also beareth a yelow floure, and hath a pale rote within, but blacke without, sharpe, swete sauouring, tender, full of Juysce, and byting the iawes.

I i.

The

The Herbe for his sweete savour is used in bathe, but the seede is of greater effect in medicine.

The Phisicke benefites of the Herbe Louage.

This Herbe of qualitie is hotte and drye, in the third degree, the seedes indure in strength and vertue for three yeeres.

The drie roote bruised heateth the stomacke, helpeth digestion, expelleth superfluous humors, and drunke in wine, unto the waight of halfe a dramme at a time, ceaseth all inward griefes, this also expelleth poisons, causeth urine and the termes, and perforemeth the like matters, which the Angelica doth.

The Herbe boyled in wine or water, and drunke, openeth the stopping of the Liver and milke, the Herbe bruised and mixed with Cummine, very much profiteth if the same be drunke in wine, for this recovereth the stomacke, and expelleth noxious windes out of the bowels.

The herbe Louage with Galingale and Cinamon boiled in wine, and drunke with a fasting stomacke, amendeth the diseases of the stomacke, milke, and bowels; a powder like to an Eclegma prepared of the Louage seedes, Cinamon, Kaponticke, and Galingale, with sugar in equall proportion mixed, and drunke in wine, auayleth unto the aboue sayd diseases.

If any drinke a quantitie of the Louage seedes, in wine fasting, it procureth the person to purge both upward and downward, the seedes after the boyling given by in glister forme, both greatly ease the person pained with the Gout in the feete.

The seedes steeped for a night in white wine, & drunke fasting, doe mightily drawe downe the termes, yet are the seedes of themselves over forcible unto the use of the medicine inward, in that they ministered or applied in plaister forme, both breake and open ulcers, yea expell mightily the dead yongling.

For which cause the strength of those seedes must be tempered, by a like waight of the Fenell and Annis seedes, which on such wise ministered worketh his propertie in the bodie without harme.

But the seedes may safely be applyed without the bodie in any maner, without any other addition to them.

The

The Louage seeds boiled artely in wine, do allwaie the gripings of the belly and bowels, remoue the swelling of the stomacke, digest the humors of the stomacke, cure the bitte of venemous woynes, procure vyne and the Termes.

A bath made of the louage, Rosemarie, Penieropall, Sage, Catmint, Cammonyll, Pellilote, the Cytrine Stachados, Bugwort, and Fenegreke, these together boiled in wine and sitting ouer the fume to sweate, not onely openeth the poares of the body, and draweth forth euill humors, but dissolueth the stone, procureth vyne & the Termes, healeth the Crampe, proceeding of the fulnesse of body, the paine of the Gout, the Palsie, the kings euill, and heateth all the inner members.

The roote bruised and applied in plaister forme, doth greatly auaille on the bitte of a mad dog, and venemous woyme, in that the same both mittigateth and expelleth payson.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of Louage.

The time of the distillation of the same is, that the leaues shred together with the stems, be distilled in the middle of May.

The distilled water of the Louage drinke morning and evening vnto the quantitie of two or thre ounces at a time, doth in short time help them, payned with stiches about the bzeast and sides, remoueth the grieue of the stone in the Loynes and bladder, cleareth the hoarsnesse of voyce, and putteth away the dangerous swelling of the thzoat, by washing and aplying on the same, linnen clothes wette in it.

The distilled water allwageth the swelling of the head, and the aking of the same, if linnen clothes wette in it, be applyed vpon, it procureth a white and louely countenance, if the same be diligently washed, both morning and evening with the water.

This helpeth the pushes, and rednesse proceeding of heate, hapning commonly from the knee downeward, by applying linnen clothes wet in it, that ceaseth the heate and cureth the pushes.

This cureth the Canker of the mouth, if it be often washed with the same, and that at eche time, the pouder of the Barberie roote be sprinkled vpon.

This also cureth the grieve and exulceration of womens places, if these be washed therewith: for three or foure times a day the same doeth the sayd water performe, if linnen clothes wet in it, be sunne drie times applyed vpon.

What ease and skill is required in the beflowing of the
Herbe Elecampane.

Chap. 37.

The Herbe Elecampane groweth vp with a long stem, big and spolie, and the leanes with mossy beares on the one side, on the toppe of the stem, being many times a mans height, is a bigge yealow floure growing in which the seedes are contained, and those by feeling procure ysch.

The roote within the earth reddish without, and white within, bigge, sharpe in taste, and sweete smelling. The roote is digged vp at the beginning of summer, and sliced, dzyed in the sunne.

This especially flourisheth in the moneth of July.

The Elecampane may not be sown, in that the seedes besown in beds prosper not, but rather let the yong buds broken tenderly from the roote in earth well dunged and laboured also; e. And those beginne to set in the moneth of February, well three foote a sander, one from the other, in that those send forth bigge leanes, and long rootes spreading in the earth.

The Phisicke commodities of the Elecampane.

A The Elecampane of qualitie heateth in the ende of the third degree, and moystneth in the first.

The powder of the dry roote mixed with pure Hony, and bled in forme of an Eclegma, amendeth the cough, the roote also of the Elecampane (artely prepared) defendeth the Lungs from euill humors, remoueth the ache of the Hyppes and ioyntes, and sickeneses proceeding of a colde cause.

This expelleth the grosse humors in man, and allwageth the ach of the Bucklebones, boyled also in wine, and mixed with Sugar in the

the drinking, amendeth that hard fetching of breath by the neck especially holden upright, and procureth vyne.

The powder of the roote drunk in like maner sendeth downe the Vermes, and this is profitably ministred against payson, & the bite of venemous wormes and beastes.

The roote candied with Honny or Sugar, is sayd very much to preuaile against the danger of a pestilent appe, being afoze eaten, for which cause (the rawe roote of many) is eaten in the plagus time.

The roote of the Elecampane, is candied after this maner, by plucking the roote out of the earth in the moneth of October, at what time the same is growne to a full ripenesse, which then is to be rubbed and clenfed with a coarse hairy cloth, after this scraped faire with a sharp knife, and those rotes which are big, to be sliced into three or foure peeces so long as a finger, which after putting into a brasse chaser, to be tenderly boiled with vineger, but in such maner, as the peeces burne not to the sides or bottome of the chaser: within three dayes after the boiling, they are to be dried in the Sunne, and then bestowed into a newe earthen pot, well pitched about, on which a pleasant Cuise poured to soke them in, and store of the herb Sauerie pressed downe vpon them: which done, the mouth of the pot to be diligently stopped with a skin or thick parchment.

The rotes may otherwise be ordered in scraping them cleane, and after the cutting of them into two or three peeces, well a finger long, to let those stiepe in water a whole day ouer hote embers, which done, to boile the peeces two or three times ouer, in as much waighte of honny or sugar.

The conserue of the Elecampane roote, may be made by clenfing and scraping the roote in the maner aboue taught: which done, to cut them into thinne round slices, letting them soke in water ouer the hote embers, for a long space, and to boile them vntill the licour bee all wasted, then to beate those in a stone morter, letting them after to passe through a strainer or linnen cloth: this done to boile the whole with a like waight of honny or sugar, two or three times ouer.

All other rotes may in like maner be candied, and made into conserue, but farre pleasanter in the eating, if to the confection a quantitie of Cinamom be added.

The same also they name to be candied, when the roote of the thing candied, remaineth whole after the candying; but the contrarie in a contrary maner remaineth not whole, in that the same is beaten small, to the making of it.

The leaues of the Elecampane boyled in wine, and a plaster made of the same, applied to weake and leake members, both so much heate them, that in shorte time they recouer strength and health.

The Elecampane putteth away the and heavinesse, comforteth the heart, and sendeth forth the superfluous humours by urine: this also (after the minde of Hippocrates) causeth mirth.

The herbe defendeth and preserveth the skin of the face, and like garnisheth the whole body with a continuall smellinesse, the wine also of the Elecampane made, heateth colde members, the same drunk orderly, helpeth all the diseases which are afoze offered.

Here note, that all wines boyled or made of the herbes, do more prevaile in the morning, than at evening.

The Elecampane boyled with Pellitory, and mixed with oyle, applied hote to the belly, ceaseth the gripings of the bowels, and the same applied vnder the Anuell, removeth & helpeth the strangury.

The worthy vertues of the distilled water of the leaues
of the Elecampane.

The time answerable to the distillation is, that the herbe and roote shzed together be distilled in the ende of May.

This water drunk morning and evening, for five or six daies together, the quantitie of an egge-shell full at a time, expelleth the grieve of the stone.

The distilled water drunk in the sayd manner, or a quantitie bestowed in drinke, helpeth the person broken: the same also drunk, if the head annoynted therewith, in such maner as the same may be in, greatly comforteth the head.

The distilled water drunk morning and evening for certaine daies together, comforteth and strengthneth the stomacke, amendeth the hard fetching of breath, the coughe, pleurisie, poison, the stone, and termes in women.

The

The distilled water strengthneth the members annointed therewith, and the more by daily drinke thereof: this also expelleth the stone of the kidneys and bladder, and the same cleareth the parts of the body, and causeth urine, by drinke of it morning and evening, for certaine dayes together.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of the roote.

The roote of the Elecampane is to be distilled about the end of May, or from the moneth of July, vnto September.

The distilled water of the same drunke many daies together, vnto the quantitie of two or three ounces at a time, healeth an inner ruptire: the distilled water drunke in the sayd maner, helpeth the stone, prouoketh the termes in women, alluageth the griefe of the stone, and prouoketh urine: yea, this drunke in the abovesayd maner, sendeth the deade youngling out of the mothers wombe.

The distilled water either drunke or applied with linnen clothes wet in it, remoueth the swelling of womens places: the sayd water also drunke or applied with linnen clothes, alluageth the swelling testicles, and only this drunke often, doth amend them.

The distilled water drunke sundry daies vnto the quantitie abovesayd, both morning and evening, ceaseth the coughe, and consumeth the grosse and clammy humours about the stomacke.

The care in the bestowing of the herbe Pepperwozte.

Chap. 38.



Pepperwozte is a scemely herbe, yelding leaues greater and broader than the Peach, or Bay-tree, and those thicker greener, and softer, the herbe also growing a foote and a halfe, and sometimes, two foote high, with a stiffe and rounde stemme, bearing on the top white and very small flowres, after these a small seede and long roote.

The leaues are soure, & bite in taste like pepper on the tongue, for which cause this is rightly named Pepperwozte: this groweth euery where in Gardens, and well ordered in the ground, endureth for two yeares,

yeares, in certaine places also (as witnesseth Ruellius) it continueth greene ten yeares. It flourisheth & beareth flowers in the month of June, & July, and next yeldeth the seeds.

The herbe Peppertworste ought to be set before the beginning of Marche, after the growing up, to be clipped and cut like the Wines, but this not often: for after the first day of November, the herb ought not to be cut, least it perisheth & dyeth through the colde season ensuing. The herbe prospereth and continueth two yeares, if the same be well dunged about, and diligently warded.

The phisike benefits of the herbe Peppertworste.

The herbe of qualitie heateth and dryeth in the third degree, as Brunfelsius reporteth, but Galen affirmeth the Peppertworste to be hote, as the Cresses is, in the fourth degree, yet lesser dryeth than it, and the leaues of this herbe both by propriety exulcerate: the nature also of the herbe, is to cut and extenuate the meate received, and clammy humours.

The Peppertworste is not to be used & taken inwards without milke, and it hath the like properties as the Cresses, which after the manner of condite things, must be condited with milke and Salte. And the same may be made after this manner, by infusing the fresh leaues in newe milke: and after the third day, the whey pressed forth, to which then greene Sawery, the drie seedes of Coziander, Will, Lime, and Parsely mixed, and diligently beaten together, this well sodden and strayned, to adde so much salt as shall suffice.

Seeing the leaues possesse such a sharpnesse (as Dioscorides reporteth) that they doe exulcerate partes within, for that cause may they aptly serue vnto exulcerating in the paine of the hips, if after the brusing with an Elecampane roote, it be laide to the place a quarter of an houre. And this in the like manner lying to, auoageth the swelling of the Thill.

The roote beaten with barrowes grease, & with the Elecampane roote, and applied in plaster forme on the hip griued, both deliuer the ache in short time.

This amendeth the skinne of the face, by exulcerating, so that the
same

The Gardeners Labyrinth.

177

same be after boyled with Oyle of Roses and Iwar. And on such wise it easily taketh away foule scabbies and leprosie, and the markes of ulcers.

The roote of the herbe Pepperwort tied on the Arme, or hanged about the neck, is supposed to ease or assuage the tooth-ache.

The care in the becomming of the Celondine.
Chapter. eighth.

The Pearbe Celondine shotteth by a foote and a halfe high, and sometimes is more slender of stemme, bearing manie leaues, and those like to the Crowfoote, but softer and so a yealowishe colour tending, yelding also a yealow floure like to the Violet, The iuice in the herbe of yealow colour like Saffron, biting the tongue, some, somewhat bitter and strong sauouring. The roote a-boue all one, but within the earth sheddeth into many yelowie hayris rootes: it commonly groweth in shadowie places, by walles and in stony haues: this flourisheth at the comming of the Swallowes, and all the Summer, but it withereth at the departure of them.

The Celondine commeth by in any earth, yet doth the same more ioy bestowed in a shadowie place, and the seeds ought to be committed to the earth in the moneth of February, which after the comming by, will endure for two yeeres, if after the shedding of the Seedes, the stemme be cut away, well foure fingers aboue the rootes.

The Phisick benefits of the Celondine.

The Celondine is of qualite hotte and drye, in the third degree absolute: but Placarius affirmeth the herbe to be hote and drye in the fourth degree. Foure things are preserued of this herbe, as the leaues with the stemme, the rootes, seeds, and iuice.

The iuice of the herbe boyled in a Copper vessel with honey on the coles, and dropped into the eyes, procureth a clearnesse of them, and putteth away the dimnesse of sight.

The iuice mixed with salt Armoniacke, and dropped into the eyes procureth the pinne and webbe grown on them, and causeth a clearnesse.

kk

neke

nesse of sight. The hearbe with the floures diligently beate, boyling them after in water, and that water bolled, poure into a pot, setting the same againe ouer the fire, and well skimming it in the boyling: when the licour beginneth to seeth ouer, straine it some after through a linnen cloth, which keepe close stopp'd in a glasse or a pot to vse: for this dropped in the eyes, remoueth the dimmesse of sight.

The iuice of the roote cleareth the leprozie, if any annointeth the places therewith, and the patient after taketh the Sirrope of Fum-torie for nine daies together, both morning and euening, which without doubt recouereth and helpeth the same.

The iuice is to be purchased in Bay, as well out of the rootes as leaues and floures beaten together, and pressed forth, which after the drying in the shadow, to be formed into little pasties.

The roote of the Celondine, boyled in white wine with Annise seeds, and drunke fasting, deliuereth the Jaundise through stopping in the bodie, and applied (after the boilling in wine) or chawed in the mouth, allwageth the tooth-ache.

A handfull of the Celondine purged, boyled in an equall quantitie of Rosewater, and strained, to which an ounce and a halfe of Triacle added, is a most effectuous remede against the plague.

The roote boyled in wine, and applied in plaister forme on the shingles or Wethers, speedely healeth them; the hearbe dried (as Platearius reporteth) boyled in wine, and applyed vpon, or a sponge wetted in the saide decoction: remoueth the Cholick passion. The powder of the roote, sprinkled on woundes and vlcers, both clenseth and healeth them.

For the Canker of the mouth, bone, or sinewes, the powder of the said roote, with the powder of Roses wrought together with vineger, and boyled vnto a meane thicknes, like to mustard, and the cankerous parts annointed with it, doeth much auaille.

For prouoking of the Veneres, and cleansing the matrice, let a foment be often applied with the water of the decoction of the same.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of Celondine.

The time of gathering and distilling of the Celondine is, that the hearbe with the whole substance be small choped, and distilled in the

the middle of May.

The distilled water drunk vnto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, both morning and euening, expelleth the yelloie Jaundise: this drinke in the like manner, auaieth against the gripings of the belly.

The distilled water drunk in the aboue said maner, mitigateth the ague, and remoueth scabbes caused of cold, if they often be bathed or soupled with it.

The distilled water drunk vnto the quantitie of two ounces at a time, either twice or thrise a day, profiteth vnto the stopping of the liuer and milke.

The water dropped into the eyes, correcteth the pinne and webbe, putteth away the rednesse of them, and causeth a sharpe and readie sight.

If the mouth be washed with the said water, it ceaseth the toothache, and putteth away spots of the face, if the face be washed with this water.

The distilled water drieth and healeth a Canker, yea Fistula also, and remoueth pestilent pusshes, if a linnen cloth wet in it, be applied on the places twice or thrise a day.

The care in the bestowing of the hearbe of Filipendula.

Chapter. 40.

The hearbe Filipendula groweth in stony and rough places, as on hills, bearing a leafe like to the wilde Marsenep, or Wardly, the stemme big, and a foote or same what more in heighth, yeelding on the toppe a white floure, in the moneth of July, after that the Seede like to the Dyache, and a big roote, out of which many round heads or kernels grow.

The roote ought to be digged vp in the ende of haruest, which endureth for ten yeares.

The Filipendula cometh well vp in any earth, yet doeth the hearbe more loy, being sown or set in a stony or granelly ground: the Seedes require to be committed to the earth in the moneth of April, and to be like ordered, after the shooting vp in the weeding and watering as afoze taught of the other hearbes.

kk 2

The

The Phisick commodities of the hearbe Filipendula.

The Filipendula of qualitie is hote and dry in the third degree, which his vehement bitternesse, sufficiently declareth.

The seed, leaves, and stemme of the Filipendula, drunke in wine and hony boyled together, send belone the after burden, and farther the birth of the childe.

The roote of the Filipendula brought to powder, and drunke in wine, not only helpeth the hinges euill and strangury, but the stone, paine of the kidneys, and ache of the hips.

The powder of this roote taken in wine, removeth the swelling and coldnesse of stomacke, helpeth the hardnesse of fetching breath, and such short winded, yea all sicknesses which procede of a colde cause. The meale of this roote mixed with meat and given to eat, recovereth the falling sicknesse, by sundry daies using.

Against the hardnesse of fetching breath, take this powder, & Gentian in like waight, and use the same in meat, for this without doubt availeth in short time.

The commended vertues of the distilled water of Filipendula.

The chosen time for the distilling of it is, that the whole heart with the roote be finely tyed together and distilled in the ende of May.

The distilled water of Filipendula, drunke unto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, both morning and evening, recovereth the plague. The said water drunke unto the quantitie of foure or six ounces at a time, availeth against poison; if a man by hap hath either eaten or drunke poison.

The distilled water drunke unto the quantitie of foure ounces at a time, both morning and evening, dissolveth and cureth the stone of the kidneys, and bladder.

FINIS.

A necessarie Table to the second part of this
booke, briefly shewing the physicall operations of euerie
 hearbe and plant therein contained, with the vertues
 of their distilled waters.

Angelica cureth poysons, cleareth
 blood, and preserueth the bodie, a-
 gainst the plague. fol. 162.
 Angelica auayleth against the pestilent
 aire, it ceaseth the gripings of the bel-
 ly, it recouereth all the inward griefs,
 it helpeeth ruptures, it amendeth the
 dimmes of the sight, the bit of a dog,
 the heat of the feuer, deepe wounds,
 reneweth flesh. fol. 163.
 Angelica assuageth the ach of the hips
 and the Goute, it cureth new and
 old vicers. fol. 163.
 Artochoke reformeth the sauer of the
 mouth. fol. 53.
 Artochoke causeth vyne and venereal
 ac. fol. 53.
 Artochoke amendeth the hardnesse of
 making water, and the ranke sauer
 of the arme pits. fol. 53.
 Tribroke strengtentheth the stomacke,
 & helpeth the vntile places that men
 children may be conceiued. fol. 53.
 Trage or Drage helpeth the stopping of
 the liuer: it ceaseth the sheading of
 the gall or yelow jaundie, it casteth
 by cholles, softneth the bellie, braleth
 impostumes, swellings, swimnings,
 drawing of the wind shote, expelleth
 worms, prouoketh vomiting, helpeth
 a hot liuer, it looseth the belly and de-
 liuereth the paine of the bladder, hel-
 peth the ague, profiteth against spit-
 ting of blood: it helpeth the matrice,
 draweth a thorne or nail out of the
 flume: it looseth rough naddes from
 the fingers it helpeth the hotte goute
 in the feete, it softneth the belly be-
 ing hardened by heat, and remoueth
 swellings, fol. 18. 19.

Bete looseth the bellie, prouoketh
 vyne, purgeth the body of euil hu-
 mors: it helpeth the swelling, the paine
 of the eares, the paine of the gums,
 it procureth haire to growe and kil-
 leth lice, nittes and bandes: it healeth
 sohelkes, blisters of scalding or
 burning, gripings of the bellie,
 stayeth a loose bellie, driueth awaye
 the wormes of the bellie, helpeth the
 obstructions or stoppings of the Li-
 uer, the corrupted Spleene and the
 shingles. fol. 14. 15.
 The discommodities of the Bete: it
 gripeth and byteth the stomack and
 increaseth euil humors. fol. 15.
 Bleet softneth the belly, cureth the by-
 ting of a scorpion, the beating paine
 of the temples: it profiteth the Oyle
 on the malt, it restraineth the terms.
 fol. 17.
 Bozage procureth gladsonnes, it hel-
 peth the giddines and swimming of
 the head, the trembling and beating
 of the heart, it increaseth memorie,
 and remoueth melancolie and the
 Kinges euil, it doth onely comfort.
 Buglosse preserueth for the roughnes
 of the throat and cough, it procureth
 gladsonnes, it purgeth red cholles, it
 recouereth the Cardiacke passion, it
 expelleth the noysome humors of
 the lungs, it remoueth the swelling
 of the fette: it preserueth a good me-
 morie it comforteth the hart and en-
 gendreth good blood. fol. 18. 29.
 Bucks hozne helpeth the griefes of the
 ioyntes, it bindeth, it putteth awaye
 the feuer. fol. 77.
 Betony stayeth belching and rawnes
 of

THE TABLE.

of the stomacke, fol. 165.
Wittonie profiteth the diseases of the
 matrice, & all inward griefes. fo. 165.
Wittonie purgeth all popson: it profiteth
 frensie perisōs, falling sickness, palsy,
 ache of the hips: it helpeth digestion,
 stayeth vomiting: it expelleth the a-
 gue, &c. fol. 165.
Wittonie fasteneth broken bones, dis-
 soluteth clotted blood. fol. 168.
Wittonie stayeth the spitting of blood:
 it helpeth the eyes bruised, and the
 paine of them: it helpeth the paine of
 the eares: it causeth clearenesse of
 sight, remoueth toothache, the quoti-
 dian, tertian, and quartain ague, the
 griefe of the bladder &c. fol. 168.
Wittonie allwageh the paine of the
 goute &c. fol. 169.
Blessed thistle causeth vyne, helpeth
 the megrim, restoreth memorie and
 hearing, helpeth the diseases of the
 lungs, purgeth steame of the stomack
 and blood, helpeth consumption of
 the lungs, gripings, prouoketh sweat,
 breaketh the stone, and helpeth the
 monethly termes. It comforteth
 the braine and sight, purgeth the
 blood in the eyes, stoppeth the blee-
 ding at the nose, purgeth the flau-
 la and ceaseth the spitting of steame.
 fol. 158.
Blessed Thistle helpeth a weake sto-
 macke, procureth appetite, abateth
 heate, consumeth euill blood, prouo-
 keth sweate, strengtheneth the pale
 members, recovereth the lunges ex-
 ulcerated: it profiteth against the
 dyspnoie, helpeth the plague, im-
 stomes, cankers and falling sickness,
 it is a present remedie against the
 plague, the fevers of the stomacke,
 and the quartains: it cureth Greene
 woundes, pulses, swellings of the
 plague, anie burning, the cholicks,
 scabbes, a stinking breath: it hel-
 peth womens prutties: it hel-
 peth stiches, pleurisses, and in-

infants incombred with the falling
 sickness. fol. 150.
Blessed Thistle expelleth popson with
 two examples. fol. 160.

e

Colewort helpeth the hardnesse of
 making water, the canker sores,
 the vicers in the pappes of women,
 aches in the loynes, hardnesse of hear-
 ing. fol. 9.
Colewort procureth the monethly
 course of women, it cureth the sore-
 nesse of eyes: it profiteth against
 the eating of venemous murtherers:
 it maketh children to goe speedier
 alone, cureth the disease of the
 Splene and Jaundise: it clear-
 seth the scurfe and leppie: it amen-
 deth the voice and griefe of arteries:
 it cureth the bite of a dogge, it hel-
 peth the Reume and falling of the
 bunla: it helpeth the bite of a Ser-
 pent or Adder: it cureth the goute,
 loynt akenes, olde vicers, purgeth
 the head, draweth the termes on
 redde downe, and qualifieth in-
 flammations. fol. 10.
Colewort als wageh great swellings:
 it breaketh botches, stayeth the shed-
 ding of haire, the disease of the splene:
 it cureth eating vlers, canker sores,
 griefes of the flanks or sides, head-
 ache, a dry cough: it dyeth a moist
 belly. fol. 11.
Colewort bringeth these discom-
 odities: it hardeneth the belly: it
 harneth the steumatike, and wo-
 men hauing the redde course on
 them. fol. 11.
Cherill prouoketh vyne, and sendeth
 down the termes in women: it looeth
 steame: it putteth away gripings of
 the bellic, it ingendeth winds: it kil-
 leth worms in the belly: it healeth
 a canker: it ceaseth ache in the hips:
 it recovereth the dandie of the head:
 it healeth running sores: it healeth
 the

THE TABLE.

the bit of a madde dogge, it breaketh the stone of the bladder, and prouoketh vyne, it dissolueth the bloud gathered into knobs. fol. 72. 73.

Cheruil healeth impostumes behinde the eares. fol. 73.

Cresses dyeth superfluous humors, it expelleth the dead poysoning: it cures the cough and looseth the breast: it auaileth against the palse of the tongue. fol. 73.

Cresses are not to be vsed alone. fo. 73.

Cresses restraine the distillations of the head, cleanse the braine and paine of the head, helpe against the palsey, prouoke needling, and amend the lethargie of sleeping out of measure: dyeth the bursla, helpeth infections of the heade, as knobs and dandye: staileth the going out of the fundament, expelleth the round and flat soymes in the bodie: these helpe the griefes of the breast, the ache of the hips, and griefe of the loines, purchase a readier understanding, and soke, remove the cholike proceeding of a cold cause, helpe the strangurie, remoueth the paine of the teeth, and both allwaie the swelling of the milke. fol. 73. 74.

Carots amend a colde reume, the paine of the stomacke, stopping of vyne, and cholike, a drye cough, the hard fetching of breath, the fluxe of the head, remove wind, heat the stomack helpe the stopping of the liuer, the verting of the belly. fol. 128.

Ciclic cureth scabbed places causeth a faire skin, recouereth the stopping of the liuer: it surgeth the matrice: it helpeth the liuer, the verting paine of vyne, the dungs euill, the plague, burning agues, pestilent pusshes, the gout proceeding of heat, and cureth the shingles. fol. 56. 57.

Celandine, the iuice of the hearbe cleareth the eyes, remoueth the stone

and webbe, being mixed with salte Armonacke: The hearbe remoueth the dimmesse of sight, the iuice cleanseth the Leapzie, the root draweth away the Jaundise, and helpeth the tooth-ache, and healeth Cettlers or shingles: the hearbe remoueth the cholike passion, the pouder of the roote cleanseth and healeth bleers, healeth the caker of the mouth, bones or sintwes being enointed with the same bodied in vineger with the pouder of Roses. fol. 78.

Celandine boiled in Rose water, and a quantitie of Triacle added to the same, is a most effectuous remedie against the plague. fol. 178.

Filipendula is of qualitic hote and dry in the third degree. fol. 180.

The leaues and Stemme of Filipendula drunke in wine and honny mingled together, helpe the after burthen, and furthereth the birth of the childe: the roote brought to pouder, helpeth the kinges euil and strangurie, the stone, paine of the kidneies, and ache of the hippes. Taken in wine it remoueth the swelling and coldnesse of the stomacke, hardness of fetching breath and all sicknesses proceeding of colde causes. fol. 179.

The water of Filipendula being drunke Morning and Evening, unto the quantitie of three ounces at a time, recouereth the plague. The same also being drunke foure ounces at a time, is good against popson, and also dissolueth and cureth the stone of the kidneies and bladder. fol. 180.

E

E Adue prevailleth against the stopping of the liuer and milke, against the simple and double tert: in, against the heat of the liuer, against burning im-

THE TABLE.

impostumes, it draweth hot pushes, it cureth the Cardiacke passion, it stayeth the flux, it helpeth the hinges eail, the shingles, hote impostumes and swellings, asswageth headach, the spitting of blood, the excesse of sperme. fol. 57. 58.

Elecampane amendeth the cough, the ache of the hippes, expelleth grosse humors, ceaseth the hard fetching of breath, it procureth vyne. &c. fol. 172

Elecampane is profitable against poison, against the pestilent aye and plague. &c. fol. 173.

Elecampane recovereth strength and helpeth the strangurie. &c. fol. 174.

G

Griske heateth the bodie, extenuateth grosse humors, it expelleth wormes, cureth the bite of a Snake, taketh away blacke and blew spots. fol. 100.

Garlike harmeth the Chollerick passion. fol. 110.

Garlike putteth away inward swellings, openeth impostumes, killeth lice and mites of the heade, moneth vyne, helpeth tooth ach proceeding of a colde cause: stayeth the redding of haire, cureth blisters, recovereth epp, procureth a cleare voice, and removeth an old cough, correcteth the stomack cooleth, dyppeth in the moiste are of the stomacke, it is a preparation against the bite of a serpent, relieveth the dulnesse of sight, healeth tetters and wheles: it resisteth popson, removeth vyne, procureth Terms, draweth downe the after burden, cureth the bite of a mad dog, helpeth the digestion of a cold stomacke, the hinges eail, frenz persons, dropsie, it stayeth the fluxe, an old cough proceeding of a colde cause, it helpeth wormes in childzen, expelleth the broode wormes in bodie, it cureth the bitte of venomous thinges, the swellings

of the bladder, healeth blisters of the lungs, dropsie being of a colde cause: it helpeth the griefes of the lungs, & difficultie of vyne, headache, toothache proceeding of a colde cause, itche, the paine of going often to the stoole, expelleth a quartaine, cureth the pippes of hennies, it helpeth the stone. fol. 100. 101. 102. 103.

Garlike profiteth against contagious apyes.

Gourd comforteth the stomack, loseth the bellie, helpeth the heate of the eares, profiteth icane men, purgeth gentely helpeth the corns of the toes, fasteneth loose teeth and, helpeth the toothache, the inflammation of the liver and bladder, impostumes, procureth vyne, helpeth all agues, asswageth the heate of the liver, the inflammations of Infants heades, the burning gout, the inflammations of the eyes, asswageth tumors, blisters on the private places, loseth the bellie, cooleth burning fevers, helpeth the shingles. fol. 148. & 149.

L

Leke cureth the bite of a venomous beest, helpeth the difficulties of making watr, stayeth the spitting of blood, dulleth the sight of the eyes, offendeth the stomacke. fol. 86.

Leke juice of the Leek is deadly. fol. 86. Leke juice sodden draweth downe the Terms, procureth vyne, obtameth a superfluous heate, stayeth the bleeding of the nose, causeth vomiting, and putteth away drunks men being earth raw. fol. 86.

Leke amendeth an old cough, & the blisters of the lunges, draweth pushes, the griefe of the eares, and the toothache, it purgeth blisters, removeth the bloude clotred in bruised members, stayeth the fluxe of blood after birth, ceaseth the bleeding of the nose, profiteth against paines of the hippes, colic.

THE TABLE.

Opening of the mouth, the swelling of the throte, it procureth a good me-
morie, it helpeth the colde goate, sci-
aticke, and feeblenes of sinewes, it
remoueth the dimnesse of sight, and
putteth away the spots and web in
the eyes, it causeth thirst, and pro-
uoketh the venereal acte. fol. 79
Mustard seede preventeth the falling
sicknesse, it purgeth the braine, it
cleaseth the braine from humours,
it amendeth the fal of the bunla, and
blisters of the throte, it draweth
downe sicke from the head, it re-
moueth the swelling of the Throate,
it helpeth the suffocation of the ma-
trice, it easeth the ache of the teeth
coming of colde, it breaketh the
stone in the bladder, and procureth
the Termes, it causeth a cleare
voice. fol. 79. 80

N.

Newes nourishe muche, profite the
Stomache, encrease Sperme in
man, p'uate against popson. fol.
110.

O.

Onions maintaine health, cure bli-
cers, remoue spottes on the bodie,
profite the eares running, heale
swellings in the throte, & the cough,
remoue the gricke of the stomache,
open piles, cleare the eyes, remoue
the pin and web, amend the bloud-
shorten eyes, recouer the heares shed
away, the biting of a madde dogge
ec. fol. 93. 94

Onions eaten rawe harne the mem-
bers. fol. 93

Onions harne the Chollericke, and
profite the fleumaticke person fo-
lio. 94

Onions stay the dropping of the eyes,
helpe blcers of the privities, payne
and noyle of the eares, Disenteria,
gricke of the Lorgnes, the water be-

tworne the flesh and the skine, cure
numbing, and impostumes, payne
of the brist. Spitting of grosse hu-
mours, purgeth the stomache, cureth
wartes. fol. 94

Onions often bled, engender small hu-
mours, procure thirst, swellings,
windinesse, headache, cause to be-
come foolish, they nourish nothing.
folio. 94

Onions twice sodden nourishe. fol.
110.

Onions eaten rawe cutte grosse hu-
mours asunder, open the haynes,
prouoketh Termes and brine, en-
creaseth appetite, purge the head,
remoue the white spots on the face,
heale bites, remoue the redde and
wanne spottes of the face, healeth
scabbes, allwageth fluxes and gri-
pings in childbed, heale impostumes
speedily. fol. 95

P.

Pimpernell is especially applyed for
popson, it draweth venemous blouds
from the heart, it easeth the head-
ache, it healeth a greene wounde,
blisters and other woundes, by expe-
riment tried vpon a Cocke: It mo-
ueth sweate, expelleth popson, re-
moueth the disease of the hippes,
the coughe, and purgeth the breast,
the stone of the kidneys and blada-
der, and remoueth the strangury:
the gripinges of the bowels, & stop-
ping of the liuer and milt, it put-
teth away any feuer: an experiment
against the pestilence of the lunges,
fol. 96

Parley both incarnate Ulcers and
Carbuncles, it doth resolute the
impostumes of the pappes, it amen-
deth the stopping of the Liuer, it
prouoketh brine, it stayeth looseness
of the belly, strengtheneth loose parts
and helpeth the stone, it healeth the
syngles, the hardy making of con-
ter,

THE TABLE.

ter, and softneth the hardnesse of the paps: It helpeth the kidneys, remoueth vicers out of the mouth, and Jaundise, & helpeth womens monthly course: it is delectable to the stomacke, it expelleth winde in the bodye, remoueth scabbes, and maketh a faire skine: It helpeth the swelling of the stomacke & dropsie, it cleareth the liuer and leprae, and remoueth the paine of the loynes and bladder, it preuaileth agayn a feuer, it procureth a sounde herte and perfect memorie, and purgeth the bloud, asswageth the strangury, and helpeth the biting of a madde dog. fol. 36. 37. 38

Parielepe Seedes are the principall causes, the Rootes the nexte, the leanes as thirde in working. folio. 39

Purlelane asswageth hotte and Cholerike fluxes, and helpeth the burning feuer, helpeth the teeth being on edge, helpeth the Shingles, hindereth venereal acte and abateth sleepe, it expelleth the wormes in the belly, it stalet the fluxe Dysenteria, ceaseth the toothache, it helpeth the stomacke swollen, it cooleth inward heate, amendeth the vicers on the priuities, it healeth an hotte impostume, it remoueth the vicers of the head. fol. 68

Purlelane helpeth swollen eyes, and spitting of bloud, it remoueth the burning feuer, it qualifieth the heat of the stomacke, it stayeth womens monthly course, it stayeth the bleeding at the nose, and the headache, it extinguissheth the heat of the eyes, it stalet Dysenteria, it strengthneth both the kidneys and bladder, it helpeth burning furies, it killeth the wormes in the belly, and stayeth the spitting of bloude, it helpeth excoiation in womens bowels, &

the reasonesse of priuie places, it helpeth the headache, it mitigateth a furious heate, it helpeth the nauels of infants, it stayeth the loose teeth in the head, it assuageth the kernels and vicers in the mouth, it mitigateth the desire of often drinking, it remoueth wartes, it assuageth the goute and inflammation of the paps, the fall of the bunia. &c. fol. 68. 69

Parincy and Carot moueth venereal acte, procureth vyne, & asswageth the Chollicke, sendeth downe the Terms in women, it profiteth the Melancolicke, increaseth good bloud, helpeth the straightnesse of making water, amendethitches of the side or pleurisy, the bite of a venemous beast, it amendeth the eating of vicers, the wearing of this roote is profitable. fol. 112.

Poppy procureth sleepe, helpeth the Rheume, cough, and lacke of sleepe. folio. 119

Poppy recovereth a drye cough, consumption of the Lungs, Rheume, & debilitie in sleeping, it draweth heat out of an vicer, helpeth a hotte liuer, strengthneth the Ioyntes, remoueth the rage of the goute, profiteth against the ague. fol. 130

Pompons or **Mellons**, are easie of digestion, comfort the heart, asswageth vnnaturall heates in the stomacke, they take away sunneburning and foule spots. fol. 154

Pompons profit the Rheumaticke and Cholerike person. fol. 154 155

Pompons which are round loose the belly, and cause vyne. fol. 154

Pompons asswage the running of the eyes. fol. 155

Pompons mitigate the venereal acte, clenseth the skine, causeth vyne, purgeth the loynes, kidneys, and bladder, heale vicers, and cause specdie boiling. fol. 155. 156

Al. 1.

Roche:

R.

Rocket encreaseth the sperm, causeth venereal act, causeth a giddinesse and paine in the head, encreaseth a strong heate, is hurtful to the head, encreaseth milke in women & nourishes, causeth urine, softneth the belly, comforteth the stomach, helpeth digestion, recouereth blacke scarres vnto whitenesse, amendeth pimples or pusles in the face, killeth nitres and wormes of the heade, helpeth bruised bones, and bitinges of venemous beastes, the Jaundise, & hard swelling of the milke, &c. fol. 69. 70

Rapes or Turnep sharpeneth sight, peeldeth nourishment, extinguishteth heate and drie blood, it stirreth venereal act, cureth scabbies, helpeth digestion, hotte goutes, and kided heeles. fol. 116

Radish eaten before or after meate causeth winde, dulseth the braine, eyes and reason. fol. 122

Radish profiteth the fleumatick, helpeth the stone, stopping of the urine by grauell, procureth vomiting, stayeth belchinges, the kinges euill, the cough, profiteth against popson, and to the handling of Serpents, it helpeth the noise of the eares, the stopping of the liuer, it auaileth against all sortes of popsons and diseases, it cureth strokes of whippes or bruises, it cleareth scarres and pimples in the face, it deliuereth the quartaine ague. fol. 123

Radish profiteth against the stopping of the milke, it deliuereth the water betwene the skin, and swollen milke, it eateth out the Canker of blcers amendeth the old cough and sicke, it procureth vomiting, it causeth mulshromes to digest, it helpeth griping in women, procureth milke, sendeth downe the Termes and wormes in the belly, asswageth the

S.

Saffron amendeth the hard fetching of the breath, procureth a faire colour, comforteth the heart, causeth healthfull blood, remoueth popsons from the heart, causeth long breath, expelleth infections, helpeth impostumes in the breast, moueth the venereal act, and causeth urine, helpeth headache, procureth the termes, remoueth the pelloso Jaundise, it profiteth an blcered breast, stomache, liuer, lunges, kidneys, & bladder, it helpeth gout, impostumes, swellings, the griefes of anye soze, feebleness of the heart, palley, the grief of the eyes, the distilling of eyes, remoueth drunkennesse, and diseases of the eares. fol. 110. 111

Sperage helpeth the palley, kinges euill, strangury, a hard milke, and stopping of the liuer, it recouereth the shedding of the gaul, it remoueth the swelling of the belly, and cholike, it procureth urine, and dissoluethe the smal stones in the bladder, it helpeth the griefs of womens priuy place, it profiteth against the stinging of Bees, it helpeth the hardly making of water, the paine of the gummes, teeth, mouth, breast and chine of the backe, it remoueth venereal act, and looeth the belly, the dropping paine of the urine, the difficultnesse of the same, the six Disenteria: It cleareth the kidneys, and stopping of the liuer. fol. 22. 23

Spinage softeneth the belly, moisteneth the body, remoueth the griefes of the breast and lunges, it profiteth in hotte causes, it nourisheth more than Trage, it asswageth the Choler, it helpeth the soreness of the throte, hoarse voice, the hardness of breath, the cough, &c. fol. 14

Soyrel procureth appetite to meate, yester

THE TABLE.

preserueth against the plague, it ripeneth sores, it allwageth the fire Disenteria, the paine of the belly, & aboyntment of the stomach, it helpeth the leaprie and Ringwormes, and rough nailes, the itche of the body, the paine of the eares and teeth, the tinges euill the head, ach any sickness comming of heat Jaundise the reds of women all fluxes of the belly, the swelling of the milke, the burning of the feuer. fo. 25. 26

Strawbery leaues helpeth hot impostumes. fo. 77

The Strawberry amendeth the hardness of the spleene, the stone, healeth wounds and vicers, procureth the termes, stayeth the bloody flux Disenteria, and causeth vyne, it helpeth inflammations of the liuer and cleanseth both the kidneys and bladder, it helpeth aches & prouoketh vyne: it fasteneth the Teeth, and stayeth the rume: it is good for Chollerick stomakes, it putteth away the impostumes of the thycate, it remoueth the rednes and pimples, which happen on the face through the heate of the liuer, it allwageth the rednesse of the eyes, the Jaundise, fetching the wind shorr, & cooleth thirst. fo. 78. 79

Scallions or squill Onions moue venereal acte, cut the tough matter in the stomach. fo. 106

Squill Onion amendeth the Dropsie, the fetching of winde hardly, the defaultes of the liuer, the ague, exulcerations, purgeth fluxes, and the belly, causeth vomiting. fo. 107

Squill Onions amendeth the hard fetching of breathe, an olde coughe, griefes both of lyuer and lungs, expelleth wormes, melancholic, Apoplexie, falling sickness, the stone, purgeth the matrixe, cureth the ache of the hips, fasteneth the teeth, amendeth the sauor of the breath, helpeth the hearing, dyteth away wartes,

chappes of the scete, running scabs, the candyp of the heade, the bite of Serpents, procureth haire to grow, ameth the foule gums, the sight of the eyes, griefes of the sides, expelleth all diseases of the body: It killeth mice, &c. fo. 10.

Time remoueth ioynt sickness, purgeth Choller and humours, it helpeth the passions of the Bladder, the swelling of the belly it remoueth the greffe of the hips, loynes and sides, it amendeth the breast & the inflammations of Hypochondria or the flanks, it helpeth Melancholic, clearenes of the eyes, and the paine of them: It assuageth the griefe of the colde gout, the stiffness of iuntes, it assuageth the swelling of the Testicles, it purgeth the bowells, it helpeth the hard fetching of breathe, and falling sickness, it breaketh the stone of the liuer & bladder, it helpeth the stinging of a Wic. fo. 40. 41

Blacke time is not to be vsed. fo. 41
Time which hath a purple flowre, is commended: all Time is mighty hote. ibidem.

Time healeth the bite of an Adder, or snake, it helpeth the spitting of blood, it stayeth the Rume comming of a cold cause, it easeth the coughe and a cold stomacke, the head-ache, frenzies, & charge, & often slumbering, it openeth the stoppings of the liuer and milke and moueth vyne, it recouereth the bites of venemous beasts, it helpeth the swelling in the thyoate, the coughe, and purgeth the breast, it stayeth bloody vomitings, it heateth the stomach, it remoueth winde in the bowells, it easeth the strangury, it moueth vyne, and expelleth the stone. fo. 39

THE TABLE.

Valerian prouoketh sweate, & vyne,
amendeth stiches, killeth a re, mo-
ueth the Terms, pryncpleth against
the plague, helpeth the straightnes
of the back, the headach, fluxes, and
shingles, procureth clearenes of
sight, and healeth the pyles. fo. 164.
165.

Water of the herbe Valerian distil-
led amendeth Ulcers, olde sores,
swellings, piles, bones broken, rup-
tures: it cleareth the eyes, expelleth
wormes: it profiteeth against a pesti-
lent aire, impositum, and ache of the
hips: it prouoketh sweate, &c. fo. 165
Water of the rootes of Valerian distil-
led, remoueth popson: the Quoti-
dian ague, and stiches. fo. 168

Water of white poppy distilled, cureth
the red spots of the face, procureth
white bandes: it helperth the head-
ache proceeding of heate: it extingui-
sheth any heate. fo. 131

Water distilled out of Gourdes, loo-
seth the belly, ceaseth thirst, & cough,
helpeth the stone, purgeth the kid-
neys and bladder, qualifieth bur-
ning fevers. fo. 150

Water of mellons distilled, helpeth the
stone, procureth vyne, cleareth the
kidneys, cooleth the Luer, ceaseth
thirst, breaketh the cough, expelleth
heates and swellings. fo. 156

Water of the blessed Thistle distilled,
putteth away headache, comforteth
memory, helpeth gadinelle and all
griefes of the eyes, consumption of
the body, breaketh the stone, and cu-
reth burnings. fo. 160

Water of the leaues of Elecampane,
expelleth th: grief of the stone, help-
eth the p: rson broken, comforteth &
head, strengthneth the stomache, a-

mendeth the hard fetching of breath
the cough, pleurisie poison, the stone
and Terms of women, causeth v-
ring, &c. fo. 172

Water distilled out of the ropte of Ele-
campane healeth an inner rupture,
asswageth the grief of the stone, pro-
uoketh vyne, it sendeth the deade
pungling out of the belly, it asswa-
geth the swellings of the Testicles.
it ceaseth the cough, &c. fo. 175

Water of Strawberry leaues distilled,
remoueth the kings quill, it loo-
seth the hest, purgeth the lungs, helpeth
the cough, cleareth the leaues: it mi-
tigateth the heate in the eyes, it cea-
seth ouermuch sweating, it is helth-
full for the stopping of the Luer.

Water of Mustard seedes distilled, a-
mendeth vices of the gummies, it
helpeth the consumption of members:
it heateth the marrow in the bones,
this water profiteeth against a colde
disease in the ioyntes. fo. 82

Water distilled out of Leekes remedi-
eth the spitting of cold blood: it pro-
fiteth a barren woman, it stalet the
bleeting of the nose, it helpeth a co-
stive belly and ache of the hyppes,
purgeth the kidneys and bladder,
procureth vyne, expelleth the stone,
healeth wounds: it profiteeth caulce-
rations and fracture of womens pla-
ces. fo. 88.89,

Water distilled out of onyons, recour-
reth swellings caused by the bite of
a mad dogge, asswageth headach &
toothache, causeth hairs to growe,
expelleth wormes. fo. 95

Water distilled out of Garlike, helpeth
the swellings in the throte: also the
greene sicknesse, and swelling of the
splene. fo. 104

Water distilled out of Rapes, helpeth
gallings, burnings, scaldings, swell-
ings of the feet. fo. 117

Water, distilled out of Radishe, help-
eth

THE TABLE

eth digestion, the kings evil, looping
of the belly, cleareth the stomache: it
openeth all manner of stoppings, exte-
minateth the humors in the stomache,
cleareth the breast, causeth a cleare
voys. fo. 125
Water of Marigold recovereth popo-
ling taken in meads or in the lake, help-
eth the Quartan, breaketh downe
Terms, and helpeth the stone: al-
swageth the ringing of a stone, pro-
fecth against the venom of a scorpion,
helpeth the itching in the side, clea-
reth the eyes and the face: it remo-
ueth yellow or blackish spots by bea-
ting: also the swelling of the throat,
and cleareth the kidneys: breaketh
the stone, and causeth vyne, and ex-
pellet the water betwene the skin.
fo. 125

Water distilled out of Parsneps, help-
eth the palsy, mooueth the venereall
oct, and encreaseth the sperme, help-
eth the papynfullnes in making of
water. fo. 128

Water distilled out of the roote of Lo-
uage, helpeth an inner rupture, help-
eth the stone, prouoketh the Terms
in women, remooueth the swellings
of womens places, and ceaseth the
cough. &c. fo. 171

Water of Colewortes stayeth womens
ridges, it prouoketh the birth of a
childe, the dropping of the vyne: it
stayeth a loose belly. fo. 112

Water of the red Colewortes softneth
the belly, putteth away the gibbiness
of the head, helpeth the Apoplexie,
the Cramp, palsy, inflammations,
swellings, & bickers within the body,
and without. fo. 113

Water of the white Beete, prouoketh
against the stone, it ceaseth the dex-
ing paine of the sides, &c. fo. 115

Water of Sowthwode prouoketh against
the plague: it remooueth all inward
heates, ceaseth all fevers, helpeth the
liver and milke: also remooueth the

and angles, scaldings, or burning, the
kings evil: it cooleth the burning
heate of agues. fo. 127

Water of pimpernell helpeth the stone of
the kidneyes and bladder, and pur-
geth the reins: it helpeth the plegue,
prouoketh women whose matrix is
cold, and singeth downe the ribbes: it
helpeth the itching of the members:
it expelleth grief from the heart, and
small humors, and prouoketh vyne:
it prouoketh against popson, and cau-
seth a white skinne. fo. 127

Water distilled out of Sage, asswa-
geth the gripings & swellings of the
belly: careth Disenteria, and hard-
ness of fetching breath: it comfort-
eth the heart and brayne, and ren-
dereth a help to memory and wit: it
purgeth euill blood and frendlesse: it
ceaseth the ringing of a stone, or spi-
der: it prouoketh clearenes of sight:
it remooueth the ringing and payne
in the eares: it comforteth the heart:
it helpeth the Reume, burning fe-
uers, and Jaundie: it cooleth the
liver: it helpeth the fluxe disenteria,
the paynfull fetching of breath, and
decay of wits: the weak brayne. it
purgeth the blood and pricking a-
bout the heart and breast: it cleareth
the leappy and scabbes and stayeth
the shilling of the head, the headach,
the burning of the eyes, the ringing
of the eares. fo. 130

Water of Marigoldes distilled, recou-
reth all defaultes of the eyes, and
prouoketh cleare eyes, and also put-
teth away the griefes of the heade
fo. 133

Water of Parsley distilled, prouoketh
against the stone of the kidneyes &
bladder: it purgeth the kidneys and
bladder: it greatly prouoketh vyne.
fo. 130

Water distilled of running Tyme,
strengtheneth the heade, brayne, and
stomache: it also prouoketh appetite
fo. 130

THE TABLE

to meate, it remoueth the noise and
rumbling of the belly, it softneth the
hardnes of the stomach and moueth
vrine, it comforteth the sight, and
consumeth distillations of the head,
it helpeth a quotidian ague, it augmen-
teth a cooled Luer and melle, and
healeth the bowels ulcerated, it o-
peneth the stopping of nostrils and
eares, it restoreth hearing, helpeth
giddines, stayeth desire to vomit, &
expelleth the gripings of the belly, it
breaketh the stone, & moueth vrine,
it cureth bruised members. fo. 40

Water of Marigoldes or holshoke di-
still'd cureth the breaking out of the
mouth, as also the outward and in-
ward heates, the shingles, vicers,
and all swellings, it cureth all inward
heates of feuers, it cooleth all im-
purities of the lungs, and sides, it mi-
tigateth the flux Disenteria, the hot
swellings of womens places, the kid-
neys & bladder, it expelleth the stone,
it procureth sleepe in a hot feuer, &
ceaseth thirst. fo. 44. 45

Water of Whites distilled, strengtheneth
the stomach and digesteth the meate
receined, it helpeth the stopping of
the luer and myke, it openeth the
wayes of the vrine, it procureth an
appetite to meate, it stayeth belching
and vomiting, it recouereth a shin-
king breath, and putrifid gummes,
it stayeth sounding and giddines, it
purgeth the matrice, it dissolueth
milke courded in hard Dappes, it
healeth ruptures within, it restoreth
the braine fallen, it healeth the scabs
of children, it helpe h. wormes, and
heateth a cold stomach. fo. 45. 46

Water of Tichopeuoleth the heat of
the stomacke, it preserveth from the
plague, it cureth carbuncles, it stay-
eth the rising of the lungs, and stop-
peth the flux Disenteria, it openeth
the stopping of the Luer, it helpeth

the swelling of the braine & throte,
helpeth swollen members, & the bite
of venomous beastes, helpeth the bli-
sters in the eyes, and the dimnes of
sight, the penne and such. fo. 58
Water of Lettuce distilled profiteth the
luer, it cooleth the blood inflamed, it
stayeth & flux Disenteria, it smetheth
trembling of members, & helpeth sleep
it helpeth women lacking milke, it
ceaseth a dry cough, it mollifieth the
throte, cleareth the breast and lungs,
ceaseth thirst, tempereth heat of the
stomach, Luer & kidneys, it looseth
the belly. fo. 65

Water of Cherill distilled, helpeth me
burst in & hurt by grievous fall and
resolueth the blood clotted in lumps,
it profiteth against & stone of & kid-
neys, it looseth the belly, it procureth
a good stomach, comforteth the heart,
putteth away shaking of the feuer,
is healthfull for the heade, and com-
forteth the senses, it remoueth the
paynes of the lungs. fo. 75

Water distilled of Strawberies, amen-
deth an unnatural heat, ceaseth thirst
proceeding of the luer, or of cholier,
it cooleth the luer, looseth the breast,
refresheth the heart, purgeth & blood,
helpeth the kidneys euil, procureth a-
gainst the stone, loynes & kidneys, it
cureth blisters in the mouth, it pro-
cureth womens Terms, helpeth a
broken legge, healeth all foule legs, it
cureth filthy woundes, & assuageth
swellings of & face, helpeth & a capy
purgeth blood, remoueth spots out
of the eyes, & comforteth nature, ex-
pelleth poisons, assuageth burning
humors and comforteth conception,
stayeth watering in the eyes, & cooleth
heat in the, restoreth a dimmed sight, it
cureth pimples in & face. fo. 81. 82

Water of Betony distilled, putteth a-
way dropsy, jaundise & ague, cureth
& diseases of & kidneys & milke. fo. 96

